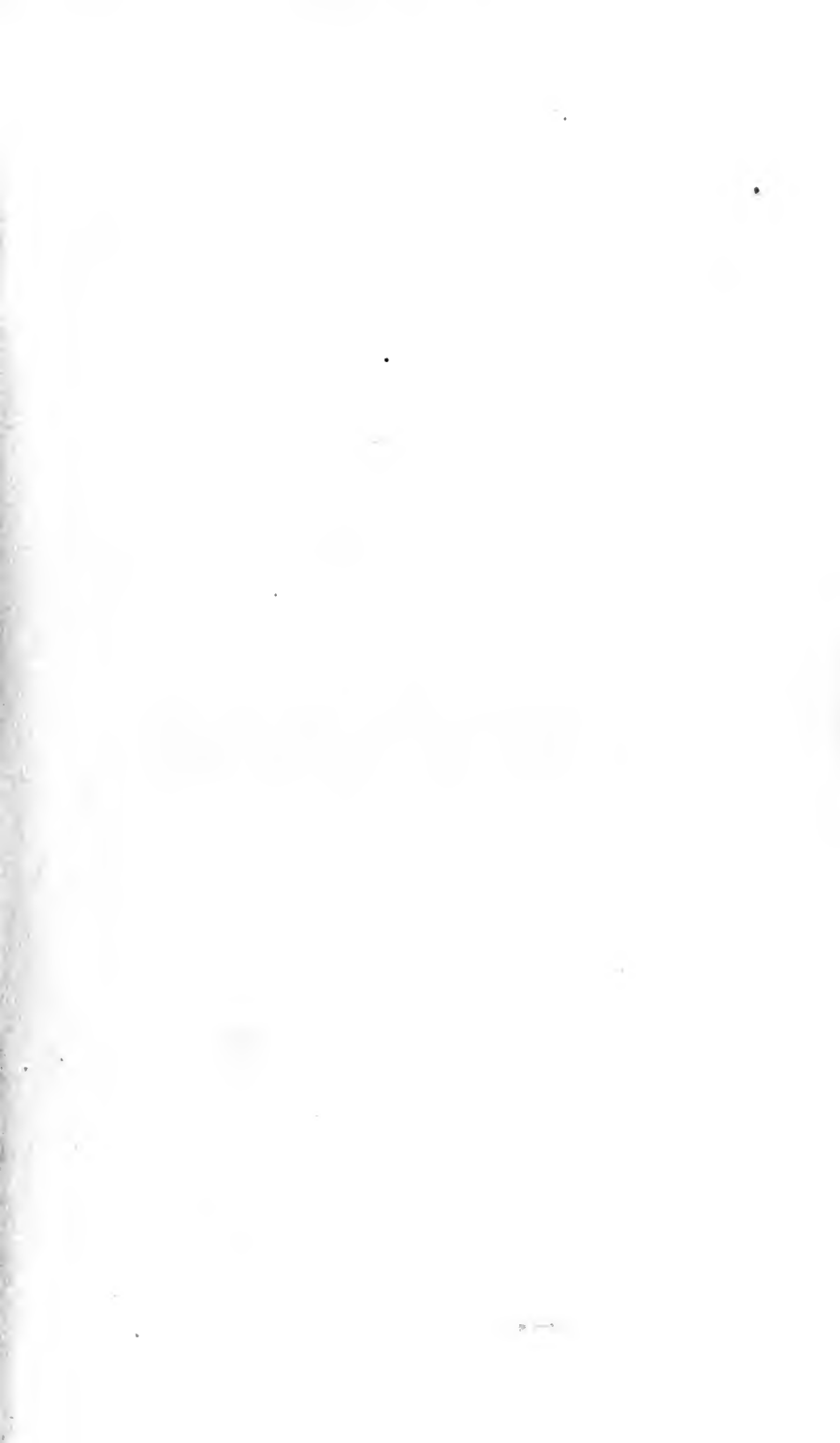


3 1761 02001790 1

VICTORIA UNIVERSITY- LIBRARY



This book is purchased from
The Schofield Fund
given in memory of
William Henry Schofield
Victoria College, B.A. 1889
Harvard University, Ph. D. 1895
Professor of Comparative Literature
Harvard University, 1906-20.
Harvard Exchange Professor at
University of Berlin, 1907
Lecturer at the Sorbonne and
University of Copenhagen, 1910.
Harvard Exchange Professor at
Western Colleges, 1918.



The English Conquest of Ireland.

12

Oxford

HORACE HART, PRINTER TO THE UNIVERSITY

Original Series.

107

The
English Conquest of Ireland.

A. D. 1166–1185.

*MAINLY FROM THE 'EXPUGNATIO HIBERNICA'
OF GIRALDUS CAMBRENSIS.*

A Parallel Text

FROM

1. MS. Trinity College, Dublin, E. 2. 31, about 1425 A. D.
2. MS. Rawlinson, B. 490, Bodleian Library, about 1440 A. D.

PART I. THE TEXT.

EDITED BY

FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL, M.A.,

TRINITY HALL, CAMBRIDGE, HON. DR. PHIL., BERLIN.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY,
BY KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & CO., LIMITED
PATERNOSTER HOUSE, CHARING CROSS ROAD, W.C.

M DCCC XCVI.

PR
1119
A2
no.107

61032
22-1-37



DEDICATED TO THE

RT. HON. WILLIAM EWART GLADSTONE, M.P.

AND ALL WHO HAVE WORKT FOR

Justice to Ireland

See opposite. Mr. Thomas Austin sends me some more forms worth notice in the Dublin MS. :—bethwen, between, 10/12 ; bolthenys, boldness, 75/15 ; ather, either, 100/3 ; ayse, ease, 148/1 ; behoud (? th), behoof, benefit, 112/30 ; culuertnesse, falseness, 126/31 ; cytteyns, citizens, 122/27 ; dur̄, door, 42/22 ; ense, ends, 80/29 ; fale (fele), many, 74/10 ; fobler, feebl̄er, 68/6 ; forume, form, 39/12 ; ? heuedes (as in note), 14/17 ; hym briddesum, Greek *αἰρος* *airos*, 14/1, 32/20 ; I-shwerne, sworn, 24/26 ; mich yuell, leprosy (comp. great pox), 32/7 ; neyght, nigh, 74/16 ; pynsynḡe (pinching), affliction, 88/6 ; rechest, reckest, 108/9 ; ruthlynḡe, ? rattling, 16/13 ; schavnḡe, change, 51/6 ; senne, synod, 120/15 ; senthe (? seūthe), seventh, 58/30 ; senfte, 59/30 ; soine, soon, 60/11 ; soldrys, shoulders, 89/11 ; sortely, shortly, 149/22 ; shechynḡe, seeking, 147/19.

FOREWORDS.



THE first manuscript of this interesting story of "oure knyghten gestes yn Irlande" (92/15), and of Henry II's Conquest of our sister Isle, was sent over to me from the Library of Trinity College, Dublin, by Dr. John K. Ingram, to be copied, printed, and edited by him for the Early English Text Society. He hoped to do his work at it during his July-September holiday (1893) in Scotland, on Loch Lomond, I having read his proofs with the MS. for him. But illness prevented him; and so I (as the Society's man-of-all-work) had to take the book up. Both the story told—mainly, though freely, from the *Expugnacio Hibernica* of Giraldus Cambrensis,—and the forms of the words, interested me. For the copier of the englisht text has often slipt into his own Irish dialect, specially in the use of *d* and *t* for *th*, and has written *dyng*¹ and *tyng*² for *thing*; *drogh*³ and *trog*⁴ for *through*; *day* for *they*⁵; *idrow* (18/1) for *thrown*; *tanked* for *thanked* (14/19); *tynke* for *think* (6/26); *toght* for *thought* (16/25, 18/7); *tough* (as once in *The Three King's Sons*) for *though* (22/14); &c. At the same time he has used *th* for *t* and *d*: *thedynge* (10/7) and *tythyng* (6/15) for *tidings*; *onther* (6/31) for *under*; *reut* (8/1) for *ruth*; *betwene* (10/12) for *between*; *thwey* (12/35) for *two*; *herth* (2/8, 13, 22/28) for *heart*; *ibansheth* (24/1) for *banisht*; *Iendeth* (22/16) for *ended*; *smyth* (24/12) for *smite*, &c. The copier has other peculiarities, both in the use of other consonants and vowels⁶, which the reader will note as he goes along, and which will be collected for him in the Introduction by Dr. Douglas Bruce, of the Ladies College at Bryn Mawr, Philadelphia, that will form

¹ 88/27; 134/13. ² 24/14; 28/8; (no)tyng 8/12; 16/5; 20/9; &c.

³ 14/8. ⁴ 22/6, 7; 26/1, &c. ⁵ 10/19; 12/21; 24/10, 11.

⁶ *Both har'* 128/20 doesn't at first look like *But ere*: still, you soon get accustomed to the scribe's little weaknesses. *Harym*, harm, is in the Rawlinson MS. 143/12: cp. *sarrif* serve, in Misyn. E. E. T. Soc. The Southern infinitive in *-y* or *-ye* occurs in both MSS. 58/27, &c. For other odd spellings, see opposite.

Part II. of this book, when complete, and will no doubt be finished in 1894, or '95.

As it was now and then hard to understand the Dublin text, and one nearer the standard tongue turned up in the Rawlinson MS. B. 490—the MS. that contains one of Mr. Steele's text of the prose *Secreta*—I got Mrs. Parker to copy this Bodleian MS.¹, and the Clarendon Press to set it opposite the Dublin one. The comparison of the two versions is full of interesting points, as the Rawlinson is generally less archaic than the Dublin², while each helps to fill up the other's occasional leavings-out. There is at least one other MS. of the *Conquest*, the later one in Trinity College, Dublin, F. 4. 4, which is said to be a 16th century transcript of E. 2. 31. From it, an extract is given below, pp. xiv-xvi as a specimen. Doubtless, other MSS. of the text exist elsewhere. Luckily for us, the late Rev. Jas. F. Dimock re-edited the *Expugnatio Hibernica* in vol. v. (1867) *Giraldi Cambrensis Opera* in the Rolls Series of *Chronicles and Memorials*; and his notes, dates, and Preface have been of the greatest use to me. He says (p. xxix) that there are two editions, and perhaps a third, of the *Expugnatio*: (1) that in an early 13th century MS. at Lambeth, No. 371, "probably penned during Giraldus's lifetime" (p. xxxi), and in (R.) and (B.), MSS. Bibl. Reg. 13 B. viii in the British Museum, and Rawlinson B. 188 in the Bodleian. In treating the two latter MSS. as of the first cast of the work, Mr. Dimock neglects the marginal additions of the Royal MS. These additions make (2) the second version of the *Expugnatio* (pp. xxxii, xxxiv), shown in (R.), and MS. Ff. 1. 27, in the University Library, Cambridge, in which "there is one whole chapter, (also in our English, p. 38-40 below) the eighteenth of the first book—giving the account of the synod at Armagh in 1170, of which no other mention is known besides this,

¹ Mr. George Parker has collated the proofs with the MS. Mr. Thomas Austin has made the Glossary and Indexes to both Texts. Dr. Ingram wrote the English side-notes to the even pages 10-32, tho I've altered 2 or 3 of em.

² I suppose the first englishing now represented by the Dublin MS. was made in the 14th century.

in this chapter of Giraldus—which is not in Lambeth 371, but is in Bibl. Reg. 13 B. viii and Rawlinson B. 188.”

We now come to the MS. of most interest to us, Harleian 177, for in it only (as I gather from Mr. Dimock’s note 3, p. 236) is the original of one of our English bits on pp. 16, 18 below:—

Trin. Coll. Dublin, E. 2. 31.

A wonder was of that fantasye: A-morowe, whan it was day, the place ther this folk iseye smyten vpon ham, the wedes and the grase that stoden al euen vpright, thay lay alle idrow adoune, and icast to grond.

Harl. 117, lf. 14, bk. 15.

Mirum autem fantasmate tali, quod in crastino die clarescente, in loco ubi uidebatur exercitus ille in ipsos irruisse, herbe & vrtice, que prius alte fuerant, & erecte, solotenus prostrate iacebant, & complanate.

For this, the other MSS., R. and B., have “primus hic miles, qui in hac insula niso mansueto et domesticato Nisi filiam infestavit.”

On this Harleian 177, Mr. Dimock says, at p. xxxv of his Preface:

(it) “furnishes a copy of the *Expugnatio* which, so far as it goes,—it has many and large omissions—generally agrees closely with the text of this second edition. . . . The omissions are more especially of the extraneous matter, not relating to Ireland; but there is much curtailing also of Irish matter, when not directly historical. In the descriptions of the heroes, for instance, much often is left out; and in the orations which Giraldus puts into their mouths, still more. The compiler of it never condenses, but simply omits. In an oration . . . he will retain two or three sentences of the beginning, and two or three more of the end, with perhaps another or two out of the middle, if not very much less than all this, word for word as in the complete oration, without much care about connection or sense . . . it certainly is only an abbreviation, such as I describe it.”

This is just the case with our English text¹, though here and there it has bits not in Harl. 177. As to that MS., Mr. Dimock continues, pp. xxxv–vi:

“It generally agrees closely, as I have said, with the second

¹ It stops at chapter 34 of Book II (75 of our pages go to 171 of the Rolls *Giraldus*).

edition, as in (R.) and (F.); but it exhibits a somewhat more advanced text. For instance, the word *Stadia* of (L)ambeth MS. occurs only twice instead of four times, out of eight as in (R)awlinson MS.: and instead of *Arcarii* always, as in the early manuscripts, it has the *Satellites equestres* of the later ones, in about half the instances where the words occur. And, moreover, in a few instances, it has a word or two that are not in the early manuscripts, but are in the later ones.

This manuscript has no note whatever as to its history; but it, or its original perhaps, would seem to have been written by one of the English settlers in Ireland, as it attempts occasionally, instead of Giraldus's Latin of all the other manuscripts, to give an English rendering of the Irish names. Thus, instead of *Murchardi filius*, or *Dermitius*, or *Murchardides*, it has 'Macmorhith' or 'Macmorhith'; instead of *Ororicus*, 'Oroch.' In one instance the writer appears to make a blunder in his Englishing: he renders *Otuethelis* 'Oneyl' instead of O'Toole. . . . It is not the work of a very correct scribe."

As a sample of the cutting-down, by Harl. 177, of Giraldus's descriptions of men, take the most trenchant instance, that of Henry II. In the Rolls edition, this description takes nearly six big octavo pages, *Op.* v. 301-6, the whole of Chapter 46, Book I. Leaving out the first page, Harl. 177 and the englisher start with the second, p. 302:

Expugn. Hibern. lib. i. cap. xlvi.

Harl. MS. 177, lf. 44, bk. 45.

Descriptio anglorum regis

Henrici secundi.

Erat igitur anglorum rex, henricus secundus, uir sub-ruffus, cesius; amplo capite & rotundo; oculis glausis; ad iram toruis, & rubore suffusis; facie ignea; uoce quassa; collo ab humeris aliquantulum demisso; pectore quadrato; brachiis ualidis; corpore carnoso; Et nature magis, quam gule

Dubl. MS. E. 2. 31.

Page 88 below.

The kynge henry the otheŕ, was a mañ sauŕede, rounne heed, & round grey egheñ; roghly lokyng, & rede yu wreth; vysage rede bernynge, grete speche, neke somdel logñ of þe sholdres, brest thyk, armes

uicio, citra timorem [*read tu-
morem*] enormem & torperem
omnem; moderata quadam im-
moderancia uentre peramplo.
Erat enim cibo potuque mo-
destus ac sobrius, & parsimonie
quo-ad principi licuit, per omnia
datus.

[*Here a page and a quarter
of the full text, Op. v. 302-3, is
left out by Harl. 177, though
our englisher gives a little of it*¹.]

Vrgentibus incomodis, nemo
benignior: resumpta securitate,
nemo rigidior. Acer in [in]-
domitos; clemens in subactos;
Durus in domesticos; diffusus
in extraneos; largus in publico;
parcus in priuato.

¹ Et ut hanc naturae injuriam in-
dustria reprimeret ac mitigaret . . .
immoderata corpus vexatione torque-
bat . . . sibi nec pacem ullam nec
requiem indulgebat. Venationi nam-
que trans modestiam deditus, summo
diluculo equo cursore transvectus,
nunc saltus lustrans, nunc silvas pene-
trans, nunc montium juga transcen-
dens, dies ducebat inquietos: vespere
vero domi receptum, vel ante coenam
vel post, rarissime sedentem con-
spexeris. Post tantas namque fatiga-
tiones, totam statione continua curiam
lassare consueverat.

staluuarthe, of fleshy body; &
more of kynde than of glotony,
grete of wombe; for he was, as
to prynce belongeth, [of] mete,
& of drynke ful meen & for-
beryng; . . .

Whan any vnhappes hym be-
felle, noman mcker; este whan
he was yn sekernesse, no man
sterne. Suert ayeyn the bold,
meke wyth ham that wereid
vnder y-brought, hard amonge
hys owne, & priuclly large
amonge vnkouth.

&, for to a-quenche that gretnesse,
he put hymself to ful mych trauaylle,
that wnneth he lete hys body haue
eny reste, ether by day othe by
nyght; ffor, wynter & somer, he
arose euer more yn the dawninge, &
herd fyrst hys seruyce of holy chyrch;
theer-aftyr, most what al þe day he
wold ben out, othe wyth houndes
othe wyth hawkes, for yn thay two
thynges he deltyed hym swyth mych
wythal; & vnnethe he wold ryde any
amblyng hors, bot myche trottyng
hors, for to trauaylle hys body the
more. Aftyr al hys trauaylle a-day,
vnnethe he lete hys body haue a lytell
reste for to syte to hys mete the whyle
that he cete; & anoon aftyr mete, &
namely aftyr sopper, anoon he wold
aryse & stonde, & so dryue forth al þe
meste parte of the nyght, so that al
þe court was oft ennyede theer-of.

Quem semel exosum habuerat,
 uix in amorem; Quem semel
 amauerat, uix in odium reuocabat.

[Two-thirds of a page of the full text is here left out, on Henry's "extreme delight in falconry and hunting; his open violation of his marriage-vow; his untruthfulness; his dilatoriness in matters of justice; his simoniacal practises; his love of peace; his almsgiving, humility, &c."]

Humilitatis amator; nobilitatis oppressor, & superbie calculator.

[Nearly two pages of the full text are here left out, on Henry's "usurpations in things of God; his inattention to divine service; his seizures of the revenues of vacant churches; his treatment of his sons; his wonderful memory," &c., &c.—and Harl. 177 begins again with the final paragraph, of which it gives the first sentence, and the last six words.]

sed haec [h]actenus, nec preter rem tamen, cursim & breuiter hic delibasse sufficiat. [11 words of print left out.] ad nostram de cetero hiberniam reuertamur.

pe man that he ones hated,
 vnnethe he wold euer eft loue;
 & man that he ones loued,
 vnneth he wold euer eft hate.

& openly mekenesse & debonerte he louede; pryde & hauteynesse he hated, & wold brynge vnder fote.

[not englishd.]

It is not my business to follow up this question of our

englisher's original. Dr. Bruce will, I hope, do that. I note only what I have just seen, that Mr. Dimock printed part of our Dublin MS., E. 2. 31, in five pages (on six) of his vol. v., pp. xciii-xcviii¹, our pp. 2-10, to line 14, 'prince of wales'; and that from this part, he said (p. lxxvii) our MS. "seems rather a paraphrase of such portions of the treatise [*Expugnacio*] as the writer, no doubt an Anglo-Hibernian², deemed most worthy the notice of Anglo-Hibernian readers"; while Prof. Earle held it "a truly interesting specimen of fifteenth century English" well worthy of publication.

Why didn't one of these excellent folk write to me about it at the time?

F. J. FURNIVALL.

MS. ROOM, BRITISH MUSEUM,
28 September, 1893.

On the authority of Giraldus, Mr. Dimock comments on pages lxxx-lxxxii of his Preface, and thus concludes:

"Recent Irish scholars have quietly received Giraldus for what he is worth, as an impetuous, strongly biassed writer, whose statements have generally more or less of truth in them, but with much unfair one-sidedness. They have seen that his abuse is not confined to Ireland and the Irish, but is almost equally as fully lavished upon his own Wales and the Welsh; that, in fact, he has praise for scarcely any thing or body except himself and his near friends and relations. Some late Irish writers, under the reaction perhaps of his having been found too much fault with, seem to me to put more faith in Giraldus's history than it really deserves."

¹ His 'bletheher,' xevi/13, is the MS. 'blethelier,' 6/14 below; his 'foden,' xcvii/7 from foot, is the MS. 'fondene,' 8/28; his 'with,' xciv/19, is the MS. 'swith' very, 4/3 below; his 'onenth' (half), xcv/2, is the MS. 'euerich,' 4/16; his 'ichaushed,' xcv/23, is the MS. 'ibanshed,' 4/34 below; his 'inewed,' xcviii/17, is the MS. 'meued' moved, 10/12 below; and so on. The copier, Mr. J. P. Prendergast, didn't know his MS.

² And evidently a strong Churchman. See how he makes Henry II attend church-service daily 86/27, when Giraldus complains of his neglect of services. Other instances occur of like bits not in Giraldus.

SAMPLE OF THE LATER MS.

F. 4. 4, Trinity College, Dublin, p. 7 (middle of page).

For comparison with Chapter XIII of the other MSS.

pp. 30-35 below.

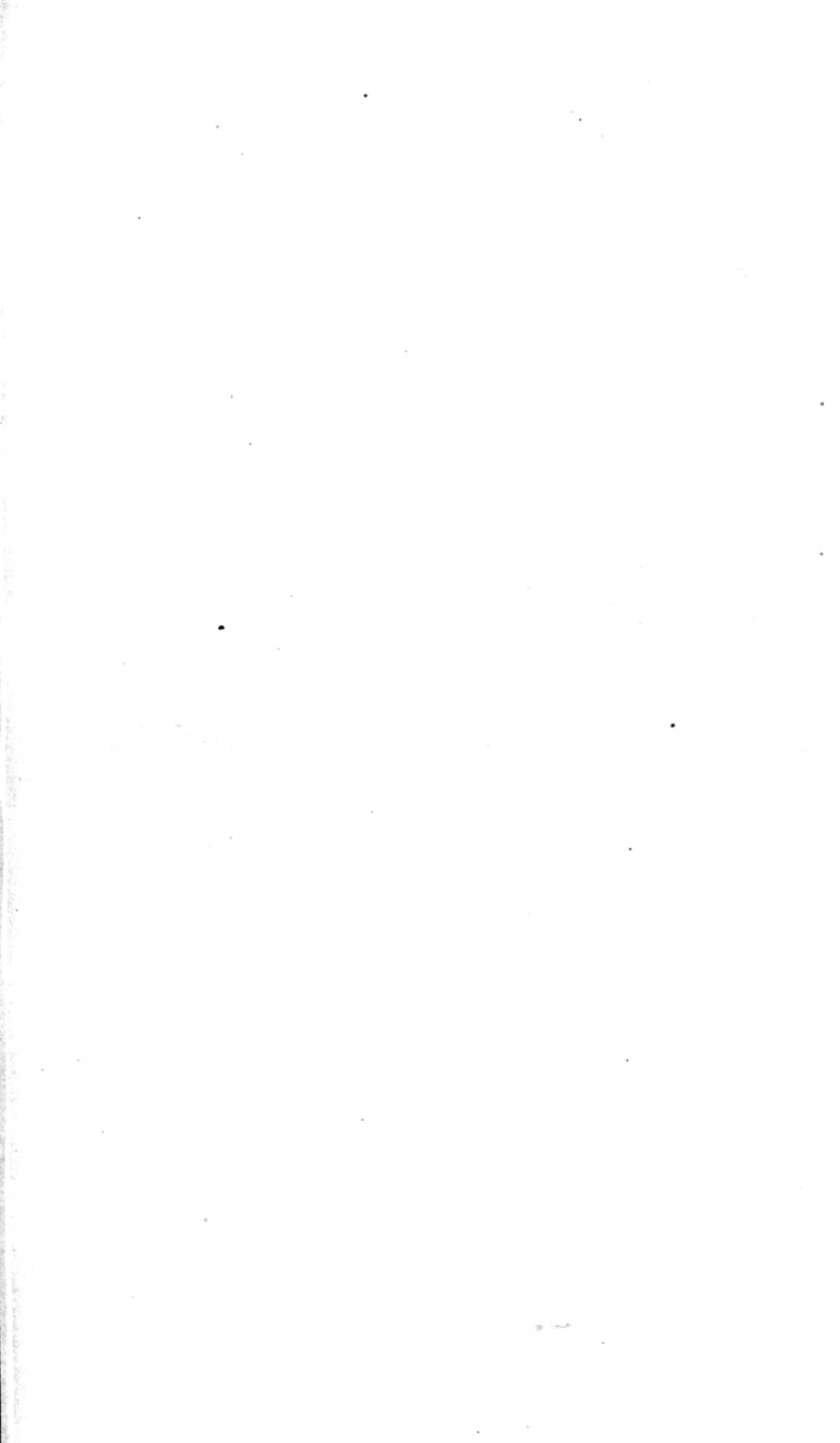
When the kinge did knowe his entent, and whether he would goe, he gave him fully leve, and warned him not. but with such leave as he hadde, he dighte and made him ready the wynter, till the begininge of may, he sente before him into Irelande a knyghte that was called Reymonde le gras;—with him, tenn knyghts, and fortye Squiers, and fourescore bowemen;—a man full hardy, and well proved in weapon; Roberts nephewe, and Morices Eldeste brothers sone. They arryved at a place called Dondoneuile, foure myle besouthe the hawen of Waterforde; and there they arrearede a diche, and a feble castell upon, of yards and turues [*? MS. iureus*]. The men of Waterforde, and with them Malaughlyne Ofolane, they did understande that they had such Neighbourehede which them lothed: they concluded that they would upon them, or enny more weare to them come. they assembled them together, well thre thowsande men, and wente over the water of sure, that partethe the twoe counties of leynester and of Mounester, and sett them in thre hosts, bouldely for to assaile the Englyshmen within there Castell. Reymonde and his men, though they weare but fewe, they weare not fainte to fighte with uneven hoste, they assemlede them together; But, as noe wonder was, soe fewe men mighte nat fighte againste soe many; theie turned them againe to there receipte. the other, thinkinge that they departed in discomfetur, they brake there sheldrun, and followed them: and they weare not fully within the gate, but some of them weare rather in [*than*] thenglyshe men. Reymonde sawe that he and his weare in greate perill, and upon pointe to losse there lyves. he cried to his fellowes, and turned worthely upon there foemen. and the firste that came in, he clave his hedde, and throwly killed him: all thoste

weare dyscomfitted, and toke them to flighte. The others them followed into all the plaine, and layde them one soe, that in litle while they slowe of them fyve hundreth and moe; and the moste parte of thother fell downe into the see from the hie roke, and drowne themselves. in this fighte, was a knyghte that heighte William fferande, that did over well, and above all other. he was a man that hade semblante as thoughe he weare one the much yuell; and therefore he put him-selfe whear the moste perill was; for [he] raughte not whether death came betwen him and his yuell, or it weare overmuch smitte [? MS. suirtte] upon him. here the pride of Waterforde fell; all there mighte went to noughte: herof came the Englyshe hoppe and comfote; and to the Iryshe, dredd and wanhop; for it was never therbefore harde, that, of soe fewe men, soe greate a slaughter was done. but unwise counsaile they did thereafter, that turned them to much crueltie; ffor when the Maystrý was all thers, and all there foemen overcom, In the fighte weare taken well threscore men and tenn, that them had yelded, and weare the higheste and the richeste men of all the Cýtty, such that theye mighte have had the Cittý deliuered for them, or els asmuch Catell as they woulde desire. Henry of mountud, that to them was come, and Reýmounde, upon diuerse domes stroven whate they shoulde doe with there prisoners; ffor Reymounde travailede aboute for to deliuer them, as a man of Rewthefull mode, and thus saide to his fellowes: "Lordings, whate is us beste to doe with oure wretched prisoners? I saye nat that one anny manner one shoulde spare his foemen; but they be nat nowe oure foemene, but be men nat rebels, but in Battaile for to defende there county, overcome. me thinke they are nowe in such state, that we oughte better to have mercýe of them, and gýve them lýfe,—for to gýve others example to be boxom,—then cruely to doe them to deathe, wheare-through others, ffor feare of mystruste, the lesse will yeld them to us." When Reýmounde had these wourds saide, in all the folke was amoste none to graunte them lýfe; Arose up Henry amonge

them all, and this them saide: "I-noughe Remounde openly to us hathe spoken of mercý and almosedede, ¹how vnked¹ landes are wonne; and not with slaughter and burneing. whether Alixandr and Julius Cesar, that weare lords of all the wourde, wonne lands bý such way, I woulde Reýmounde woulde me answe. when they came to us well arrayed for to fighte, yf theie had wone the overhande and overcome us, woulde they, for almose and for rewth, haue had mercý one us? noe, I trowe not. therefore, but those one of twoe wayes: eyther doe manly that thinge whea[re]fore we bene come, and the folke that rebell againste us, with [out] any noyse, with weapone heartely bringe owt of dawes; otherwise, yf we shall doe almose-dede one them, and spare them, as Reymounde hath saide, lett us wend to oure shippes, and turne agayne; and lett we the wretched men houlde there lande, and Brouke it, without any challendge." Henries dome licked them better then Reymonds; and the Cittizens weare demed to death. They had noe wonte of waritrees; and therefore They ladd them to the clyffe of the see, and putt them downe, and drowned them.

of the firste goode adventure that him befell, they that beste weare worthye should haue there parte, and the hoste. all the towne of wexforde, with the twoe nexte countyes, he gave to Roberte Stephensson and to Morýce fitz Geraude, as forwarde was to-for made. other twoe nexte counties, he gaue to Henry of Mountmorthie,—nexte thay twoe, one the syde towarde waterforde,—a knyghte that came in that same flote, hym pridsome of knyghts, and came throughe thearle Richarde, more for to spye the land, then for to fighte.

¹⁻¹ Afterwards written above the line in MS.



THE ENGLISH CONQUEST OF IRELAND.

EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY. No. 107.

Original Series, 1896.

Boxom-fastines 62/18: this should be two words, *buxom fastness*, an obsequious covenant, meant to render *L. fucato foedere*.

Costes: part of *far-costes* below.

Ense 80/29: read *Euse*, eaves, edge, border: 'the wode evese (*ms.* hevese) voc. 159.'—Bradley's *Stratmann*.

Far-costes 80/5: 'O.N. *farkostr*; means of conveyance, boat, ship, *Engl. Metr. Hom.* xix.'—*ib.*

Fawes 96/2: perhaps the Irish *fogha* (O'Reilly), a dart, O.Ir. *fogaë* (Lat. *jacula*).

Folk place 50/15: the folk (for *febyll* in the Rawlinson MS.) was caught from the 'lond-folk' in the next line.

Herrer 116/30: the Latin is 'et citra majoris auctoritatem urbem obtenturum.'—*Gir. Cambr. Op.* v. 342.

I-quenyted 36/35: miswritten for *Iquemed*, pleased.

I-suywed 116/9: read *I-snywed*, 'snowed' their arrows; the Latin is 'sagittarum . . . grandine perfuso.'

Lygne 102/17: as *fayre & lygne* translates 'procerus et pulcher,' the word must mean 'tall'; perhaps it is a misreading for *hyghe*, high.

Lyme 62/18: the Latin has *amorem*; the scribe must have misread *luue* (love) as *lime*, and transcribed it *lyme*.

Ost 50/2: cannot mean 'burnt.' The word is superfluous; perhaps the translator at first wrote *lytell ost* (little host), and then altered *ost* into *stonwal*, but did not clearly enough expunge the rejected word.

Priuisant 80/28: cannot mean 'foreseeing'; it is probably a mistake for *pursiuant*, *pursuivant* (the Latin is *satelles*).

Ryuely 128/12: *rifely*, abundantly.

Sheldrun 31/29 (R): company-formation, O.E. *scild-truma* (whence *shelter*); the Rawlinson MS. here preserves the right reading, that of the Dublin MS. being unmeaning.

Spourges 112/3: ? for *spronges*, shoots, sprouts.

porwe 28/12: ? through; *wel porwe* 'well through,' urgently (the Latin is 'omnibus modis').

Trukked 48/9: ran short, *trukien*, O.E. *trucian*, fail, be lacking.

Wecchene 36/31: *cwecchen*, to twitch, shake.

Wenttene 106/8: for *weten*, know (*pat is to weten* = that is to say); the scribe was misled by seeing *wentten* (went) in the line above.

Yonre 104/10: *Youre* 114/27: *yovre*, *ȝeofre*, O. E. *ȝifre*, greedy.

THE ENGLISH CONQUEST OF IRELAND

FOUNDED ON THE *EXPUGNACIO HIBERNICA* OF
GIRALDUS CAMBRENSIS

A PARALLEL TEXT

FROM TWO MSS., I. AB. 1425 A.D. MS. TRIN. COLL., DUBLIN, E. 2. 31;

II. AB. 1440 A.D. MS. RAWLINSON B. 490, BODLEIAN LIBRARY, OXFORD

THE ENGLISH CONQUEST OF IRELAND

FOUNDED ON

GIRALDUS CAMBRENSIS.

(MS. Trin. Coll., Dublin, E. 2. 31.)

[CHAPTER I.]

[Fol. 1 a.] **Y**N the tym that the kynges henry, þat was the kynges
When Henry II reigned in England, Dermot Macmurgh ruled over Leinster, A. D. 1135-71. His folk hated him; [¹ &, an, a]. [² heart].
but the wife of King Rory of Meath loved him,
and sent for him when Rory was away.
He took her to Leinster, A. D. 1152,
fadyr Richard & the kynges fadyr Iohn, regned in englaund well, & ¹ heighe mañ in Irland, þat het dermod Macmorgħ, princes of leynyster, that is I-told þe fiste parte of Irland. That dermod, 4
from the tym that he was lord of lond, & foh shold gouerne, he went amonge his heighe meñ, and so hard ham biladde þat þay casten grete hat to hym, and myche thay wax hym ageyñ in herth², þegħ þey ne durst nat oppenly shewe. Whañ he hade 8
longe whiil þus bilad hym amonge his meñ, bettidde an aduenture that turnede hym þer-aftyr to mych harme; ffor in mythe was a kynges that hegth Rowry, & a well fayr wommañ to wif; and as meñ tellede oft, and soth it is I-found, that som of heme ben 12
to vnstable of herth², wher-throgh many harmes ben oper-whiil, þat ne beñ nat now al to rekne. This Rouryes wif worthen to þe loue of Macmurgh moe þan hyr owñ lord, and he hir also, & this was longe; bot to-giddre ne myghtyñ þei nat com as 16
the wold; for hit betid a tym þat hir lord went owt of his contrey in-to fer londes, for grete nedes þat he hade to don. his wif a-waitede full well, & aspied þat hir lord most longe be owt of lond, send to Macmurgh, & bade hym, þat if he euer wold his 20
will hawe of hir, that he shold com to hyr, for sho was redy to do all þat hym likede. ¶ Macmorgħ name power with hym, and went thaer this lady was; & as hit be-spoke was, he name hir, & broght hir out of myth into leynestir, and heñ hir that to 24

OF THE CONQUESTE OF IRLAND BY ENGLYSH MËN.

(MS. Raul. B. 490, Bodl. Libr.)

[CHAPTER I.]

IN the tyme that Kynge Henry, that was the kynges Fadyr [Fol. 1 a.] Rychard and the kynges Fadyr Ihoñ, regned in England, ^{Capitulum 1^m.} was an hey man in Irland, whos name was callyd Dermot Macmurgħ, Prince of leynystre, that is y-tolde the fyfte Parte of ^{Leinster is a fifth part of Ireland.} Irlande. That Dermot, from the tyme that he was lorde of lond, and folke sholde goverñ, he werret cruely amonge his hey men, and so harde hame lade, that thay eastyn grete hate to hym, and muche they were ayennes hym in herte, theght they ne dvrste nat opynly shewe. Whan he hadd thus longe tyme lade hym amonge hys men, be-felle an aduenture that turned hym ther-aftyr to mych harme; For in myth was a kynge, whos name was Roury, and ^{Tiernan O'Rourke, king of Breifny.} hadd a wel fayre woman to wyffe; and as men tellyth ofte, and sith hit is y-found, that some of them ben vnstabill of hert, wherfore many harmys ben ofte-tymes, that ben nat now all to reherse //

This Rouries wyfe lowyd more Macmurgħ than hyr owyn lorde; and he hyr also, and this was longe; but to-giddy ne myght they not come as they wolde; for hit be-felle in a tyme, that hyr lord went out of his contrey into fere londys, for grete neddes that he hadde to done. His wyfe be-thoght hyr ful well, and, Supposynge that hyr lord moste longe be out of londe, Sche sente to Macmurgħ, and sayde to hym, that yf he euer wolde his wille haue of hyr, that he sholde cvme to hyr, for she was redy to do al that hym lykȳd //

Macmurgħ toke wyth hym many men, and went there this lady was. and as hit was be-for spoke be-tweñ them both, he toke hyr wyth hym out of myth into leynestere, and helde hyr there to hys off.

A. D. 1152.

O'Rourke's wife carried off.

A.D. 1152. his will. Nat for-það sho grad and cried, as thogh he nañd hiř
 and kept agaynes hiř will, as hit nas nat so. Than hir lord hit herde, he
 her there. was ther-of tened swith stronge, and mych moř of the shamme
 Rory and þat to hyñd was doñd, þan of the harme; all that he mygth do, 4
 his ally, he didde, for to awreke hyñd; he sent after his owñd power,
 the King ande eke all þat he mygth of other; and the kyng of Connagth,
 of Con- þat was that tyñd lorde of Irland; comd to hyñd with his power:
 naught, he gadrede so moech folke(?) þat noñd end nas, and comd into 8
 march into Leinster. leynestr for to wreke hyñd of his shame. Tho Macmorgth this
 herd, he sent to his meñd þat þay sholde hyñd helppe ayeyñd his
 fomen þat þus wereñd commyng toward hyñd. They bethoghten
 Mac- hand of the ten & the trayson þat they hañd hade ydoñd per- 12
 murgh's to-fore | and forsoke, al out of dout, þat þay nogth woñd hyñd
 men refuse helpe; and many of hañd openly turned to his fomen ayeyns hyñd,
 to help him; ffor to wreke hañd of the iniurie þat he hañd had doñd. Macmorgth
 saw þat power hyñd failed; & euerich half he was amyde his 16
 fomen beset. he was mañd of hegh hert; and with þe litiñd power
 þat he had, he werrede as long as he mygth; bot he ne mygth
 nat all-way all-oñd ayeyns all the lande folke | he was so narowe
 bilad þat nedes he most thoff deth, otheř þe lond leue; he saw 20
 þat noñd oþer remedy was: he went to the see, and fond shippe
 so he sails redy, and wynde at will, & passede oure into england, with well
 to Eng- few with hyñd; and on this maner he sawit his lif, & lefte lond
 land, A.D. & lede & all his otheř good. Hereby þat meñd may witte, þat 24
 1166, be a mañd of neuer so mych power, bettre hym is þat hys men hym
 loue þane hate. ¶ Whane Macmorgth was thus icome in-to
 england, al hys thoght was how he mygth hym best worck of the
 schame þat hyme was done, & of þat þat he was so vilich out of 28
 hys kynd lond I-dryue, he nyst of whom he mygth bettre besech
 [*Fol.1b.] help þane of þe kyng. And þe kyng was þane fer in the
 and then realme of fraunce for grete nedes þat he hade to done. Macmorgth
 to France, passed ouer to hym. þe kyng fayr hym vndrefyng, * & with mych 32
 to ask Henry II's mane shipe. and whan had he tolde hyme the enchesoun of hys
 aid. comyng to hym, and whar-for he was out of hys londe ibanshed,
 þe kyng was swyth wo therfor, & good hert hadde hym to helpe,
 nañ oþer grete nedes þat he hade to done. Whane he ne mygth 36

wylle. And ther-fore she Cryed, and mad moche sorow and lemen-
tacion, as thogh he toke hyr ayeynes hir wyll: As hit was not So /

Than hyr lorde hit herd, he was ther-of full stronge a-greued, and
mych more of the shame that to hym was don, than for the harme.
Al that he myght do, he dyd, forto be wroke on hym. he Sente
aftyr his owyn men, and eke al that he myght of othyr; and the
kyng of Connaght, that In that tyme was lorde of Irlande, come to
hym wyth his Power. And he gaderid so myche Pepyll, that they
were vnnvmerable, Comynge Into leynystre, forto be vengyd of his
shame //

Tho Macmurgh her[de ther]of, he Sent to his men, that thay
sholde hym helpe ayeynes his foe-men, that thus weryn comynge
to-warde hym.

They bethoghten them of cruelte and the traysound that to ham
he hadd done therto-fore, And forsoke al out of dowte that thay
wolde noght hym helpe. And many of them opynly turned to his
Ennemys ayeynes hym, ffor to wroke tham of the Iniury that he
to them hadd done //

Macmurgh sawe that his men failled hym; and on Euche halwe
he was amydd his ennemys besegydd. He was a man of hey herte;
and wyth the fewe Pepill that he hadd, he werriid as longe as he
myght; but he ne * myght not alway dure ayennes the Londe folke.
He was so narrow bylade, that nedys he mvste suffyr deth, or the
londe leue. he saw that non othyr remedy was. He went to the
see, and fovnde shippe redy, and wynde at wyll, and passyid owyr
into England, with wel fewe with hym; and on this maner he sauuyd
his lyfe, and lefte lond and lede, and al othyr good // Here-by men
may witte that, be a man neuer of so mych Powere, bettyr hit is to
hym, that his men hym loue, than hate // Whan Macmurgh was
thus y-come Into England, al his thoght was, how he myght hym
best wreke of the shame that hym was y-doñ, and of that that he
was so shamfully out of his kynde londe I-dryue. He wyst not of
whom he myght bettyr beseke helpe and sokovre, than of the
kyng. And the kyng was then fer in the reame of Fraunce, for
gret nedys that he hadd to don. Macmurgh passyid ouer to hym.
the kyng fayre hym vndyrfonge, and with mych vyrchipp. And
when he hadde tolde hym the cause of hys comynge to hym, and
the cause where-for he was out of his Land y-baneshyd, the kyng
was sory therfor, and good-will hym hadd to helpe, nere othyr grete
nedys that he hadde to don. Whan he ne myght nat ellis do, he

A. D. 1152.

O'Rourke
is wroth at
the shame
done him,
andinvades
Leinster.Mac-
murgh'smen fail
him,

[*Fol. 1 b.]

so he
crosses to
England,
A. D. 1166,and then
to France,
where
Hen. II
welcomes
him.

A. D.
1165-7.

Henry
appeals to
his sub-
jects to
help Mac-
murgh,

who
returns to
Bristol,

and agrees
to give
his
daughter
and Lein-
ster to
Earl
Strugoill,
in return
for aid.
Macmurgh
goes to
South
Wales,
A. D. 1167,

where Rys
is prince.

nat elles do, he name of hym homage, & othes, & lete hyme mak
hys lettres, that thus mych ben to vndrestond: 'Henry, throgħ
gode-is grace kyng of england, duc of normandy & of Acquitayne,
& erl of angoy, to al hys liegemen, englyssh, normannes, Walshe, 4
Scottes, and to al oper that to hym ben subiect, sendeth gretynge.
Whan pese lettres to yow ben i-com, witte ye pat we, dermot,
prince of leynester, in our grace and in our goode will have
receyuet; wharfore pat all pay that hym as our lawfull mañ 8
heff[pe] willeth, into his lond hym to restore, our grace and our goode
leue haue pay per-to.' Whañ Macmorgħ had the kynges lettres
thus y-purchasede—pe kyng hym yaf also richely pat hym nedet
of his tresour—he nam leue of the kyng, & wentt in-to england 12
& com to Bristow, & soiourned thaṛ a whill; & so mych the
blethelieṛ, for per com oft shippes theder out of Irland, & men,
pat he myght hiṛ tythyng of the lond & of his folkis, for his hert
was mych there-to. The whill pat he ther was, well oft he let rede 16
pe kynges wrytte to-for the peple; & largely he beheght londes and
rentes, & Rich yiftes, if any wer that hym helpe wold. Bot he ne
fond noon with-all, that such tyng wolde ne durst vndirtake,
till pat the erle of Strugoill, Richard pe Erles soñ Gilbert, com 20
to hym. Ther was pe parlement so longe y-dryue betweñ hañ,
& sekiritesse y-makyd, pat the Erle shold hym helpe with all
his power pe next somer per-after, and he shold yeue pe Erle
his doghtre, with all pe lond of leynestre. ¶ Whane this was on 24
this maner ypu[rueied, for the grete] talent pat Macmorogħ had
to beñ neer his lond—as mañ tynke [no place so¹] mery lyghtly, as
in his kynd stidde,—he went hym thennes in-to south walys, to
seynt dauyes touz, vp-on pe see; & mych hit gladet his hert, 28
thogħ he strongly mourned, pat he myght in fayṛ weder haue
somedell syght of his lond.

¶ In that tym was prince in wales, Rys, Gryffynes soñ, on per²
the kyng of england; & a swith good mañ bisshoppe of seynt 32
dauy, and was his nam, 'ahon dauy'; & both pe prince & eke pe

¹ Dermitius, desiderio visendae patriae plurimum accensus, eaque dulcedine, qua natale solum cunctos ducere solet, amplius allectus.—Gir. Camb., *Expugnatio Hibernica*, cap. ii, *Op.* v. 228, Rolls Series. ² under.

toke of hym homage *and* othis, *and* lette hym make his letteres, that thus myche bene to vnderstonð // ‘Henry, throw goddys grace, kynge of England, Duke of Normandy and of acqyntyng, *and* Erle of angoy, to al his lege men, Englyssh, normannes, Walshe, Scotcs, and to al othyr that to hym ben subiecte / Sendyth gretynge. Whan this *lettres* ben to yow y-come, witte ye that we, Dermot Prince of Lelynystre, in oure grace *and* in oure goode-wyll, haue receuet; wherfor that al thay that hym / as oure lafull man he[l]pe will, Into his londe hym to restore, oure grace and oure good-wyll haue they therto’ // ‘When Macmurgh hadd the kynges *Letteres* thus y-Purchasyd, (the kyng hym yafe also rychely, that hym nedyd of his tresoure,) He toke Leue at the kyng, *and* went into England, *and* come to Brystow, *and* soyorned ther awhyle; *and* myche radyr, for ther come oft shippis thedyr out of Irland, *and* men, that he myght hyr thythyng of the Londe *and* of his Pepyll; for his hert was mych therto // The whyle that he there was, well oft he made to be redd the kynges *lettres* to-for the Pepyll; and largely he promysyd londys, and rentis, *and* othyr ryche yeftys, to them that hym wolde he[l]pe. But he ne found none, wyth al that, that Suche thynge wolde ne druste vndyrtake, tyll that the Erle of Strugoill, Richarde, the Erlis Sonne Gylbert¹, come to hym. Ther was the Parlement² so longe y-dryue be-twen ham, and sekyrnesse y-makyd, that the Erle sholde hym helpe *with* al his Powere the nexte somere ther-aftyr, And he sholde yeue the Erle his doghtyr, *with* al the lond of leynystre // Whan this was on this maner purueyed³, For grete affeccion that Macmurgh had to ben neere his londe, (as man thynkyth no Place so Myrry lyghtly as in his Kynd * Place,) he went fro thens Into Sutte Walis, to Seynt Dauyes toun vp-on the see; *and* mych hit gladdyd his herte, thegh he strongly mornyd; that he myght in fayre weddyr haue somdel Syght of his lond / In that tyme was prynce in walis, Rys, Gryfynes Sonne, vndyr the kyng of England, And a wyrshipphul man, Bishope of Seynte Dauy, *and* also his name was dauy⁴. And both the Prince *and* also

A. D.
1166-7.The
Kyngys
letteresin favour of
Murrough,who comes
back to
England,and is
promist
help by
Richard,
Earl of
Strigoill.

[*Fol. 2 a.]

¹ Camden adds ‘dictus Strengbow, fortis arcus.’—D.² Colloquium.³ His itaque seriatim hoc ordine completis.⁴ Davidque secundo

Meneviae praesidente.

A.D. 1167. bisshoþ well wýrshipfully vndrefyngē Macmorgh, & mych̄ reut had of his enemyte, & of his mych̄ lostes, & of þe mych̄ shamme þat hym̄ was i-doñe.

[CHAPTER II.]

Rys has in prison a Sir Robert Fitz-stephen, once Constable of South Wales.

In the tyme þat this was so, was in prison with þe prince of wales, a knyght þat heght Robert Stefenes-soñ, þat som̄ tynd had y-be constable of all south walys, & many il turnes had idoñe vpon þe princes meñ whañ þay any thyngē mysdedeñ; & progh traisoñ of his owne meñ he was I-take & delyuered to the prince; & pre yeñ he was I-hold in prisonne ar Macmorgh theder cam̄. Oft þe prince hym̄ profred to delyuer hym̄ out of prison, so þat he wold be his helppē to werry vp-oñ þe kyngē; bot Robert was a trew mañ, & for no tyngē wold do thyngē wher-of he myght be per-after I-wyted of wntrowth. Thañ—progh besechyngē of * þe bisshope & of Moryce fitz-Geraud, þat wered Robertes two bretheren̄ on his moþer half,—he was delyuered out of prison on this manere: þat he & Morice his brother shold, þe next somer, wend in-to Irland, with ar power to helppē Macmorgh; & he shold hym yeue þe toñ of weysford, with þe twey next cantredes; & of this was good sekernes Imaked on ether half. ¶ Whañ this thyng¹ was all thus bespokene, Macmorgh ne myght no lengerē suffre þat he ne most to his land wend; thegh he ne fond nat þe aduentures þat he soght, such as hyme lif wer, ne non other power he ne broght with hym̄ than he out ladde. He had shippe redy, and good wynd, and passed ouer in-to Irland, & boldly aryued in lond þer he had many fomen̄ and fewe frendes. from þe see he went to fernes; and well simply he lyued per all þe wyntyñ with the Clergie of þe chirch, wiche well fayñ hym̄ vndrefyngē, and by hare power to hym̄ & to his, fonden̄ þat hame was nede.

[*Fol.2a.]

He sets Robert free, on condition that he and his half-brother Maurice Fitz-gerald help Macmorgh.

[¹ MS. kyng.] Macmorgh sails to Ireland, and winters at Ferns.

[CHAPTER III.]

A.D. 1169.

Fitz-stephen collects

30 knights, xxx^{ti} knyghtes and lx skyers, & ccc of foot-meñ with bowes and 60 squires, and 300 foot-men

Vnder that tyme, Robert Steunes-soñ hym̄ dyght to wend in-to Irland, as a mañ þat on all maner wold hold lawfully his trowthē and his behest. he hade purueied hym̄ of 30 knights, xxx^{ti} knyghtes and lx skyers, & ccc of foot-meñ with bowes and arowes; and knyghtes and þe skyers well I-horsed and well y-wepened, all of his owñ kyne and of his owne nurtuñ. Thay

the Byshope wel wyrchippully vndyrfonge Macmurgh, and myche A.D. 1167.
Pite hadd of his Enemyte and of his mych Lostys, And of the mych
shame that hym was done.

[CHAPTER II.]

IN the tyme that this was so, was in Prisonne wyth the Prince *Capitulum*
of Walys, a knyght, whos Name was Robert Steues-Sonne, *2^m.*
that sometyme hadd y-be constabill of al Sutte Walis, and many
yll tvrnys hadd y-doñe vp-on the Princes men, when thay eny
thyng mysdedyn; and throug traysoun of his owyn men, he was
y-take and delyuerid to the Prince. And thre yere he was holde
in prison, are Macmurgh thedyr come. Oft the Prince hym
proferyd to delyuer hym out of pryson, So that he wolde be his
helpe to wer vp-on the kyng; but Robert was a trew man, and for
nothyng wold do thyng wher-of he myght be thier-aftyr reprovid
of vntrowth //

Than,—throug be-sechyng of the Byshope and of Moryce Fitz-
Geraud, that weryn Robertys two bretheryn on his Modyr syde,—he
was delyueryd out of Pryson on this manere: That he and Morice
his brodyr sholde, the nexte Somyr, wende Into Irland, with har
Powere, to helpe Macmurgh; and he sholde hym yeue the toun of
weysford, with the twey nexte cantredes: and of this was good
swrte y-fondyd on euery syde. / Whan this was al thus Spokyñ,
Macmurgh myght not lengyr Suffyr that he ne mvste to his Lond
wende, thegh he ne found nat the aduentures that he Soght, suche
as hym lykyd, ne none othyr Powere he ne broght wyth hym, than
he out-ladd: / he had shipe redy, and good wynd, and Passyd ouer
into Irland, and boldely arryued in londe ther-as he hadd many
Enemyes and few frendys. / From the see he went to Fernys; and
wel sympylly he lyued there al the wyntyr, with the Clergy of the
chyirche, whych wel fayre hym vndyrfonge, and by har Power to hym
and to his, foundyn that ham was nede.

Interven-
entibus
igitur
uterinis
ejusdem
fratribus,
&c.

A clero
loci illius
honorifice
juxta
modulum
facultatis
exhibitus,
&c.

[CHAPTER III.]

A.D. 1169.

Vnder that tyme, Robert Steues-Sonne hym dyght to wende
Into Irland, as a man that on al maner wolde holde lawfully
his throuth, and his behest. He had Purveyed hym of xxx^{ti}
knyghtes and lx Squyeris, and ccc of fote-men with bowes and
arowes; And the knyghtis and the Squyris wel y-horsyd and wel
wepenyd, al of his owyn kynd and his owyn nurture. Thay dyddyn

Capitulum
3^m.

Nec pro-
missionis
immemor,
nec fidei
contemp-
tor, &c.

and lands
at Banow,
c. May 1,
1169.

Aprophecy
of Merlin
was thus
fulfild.

Macmurgħ
and Fitz-
stephen
unite their
forces,

diddeñ hame to saill att send dauyes, and arýuedeñ at Banow
in Irlaund; well vnsikere on euery halfe. thay vncharged hare
shippes, & made ham loges on lond. Thane was fulfilled a prophecie
þat merlyñ seid of this commynge: "A knyght *with party armes* 4
shall formost breke þe clos of Irland." Such armes bare þat
Robert. he send soñ to *Dermod Macmorgħ*, and didde hyñ to
witt of his commynge; and þe thedyngge spronge fort soñ into all
þe lond; what folke was to hyñ Icoñ. and of þo that to-for hyñ 8
hade I-left, and litill told by hyñ, *commyn soñ to hyñ*, so þat he
had I-gadered fywe hundred meñ. he wentt witt this folk to þe
Englysse-meñ; and [when] pay com to-gedd̄r, euery of ham was the
gladder for other. Ther was the forward meued bethweñ ham, 12
and othes y-swōr, and sekernesse I-made to conferme all þe
forward, as hit there-by-for was purueied by-for the prince of wales.

[CHAPTER IV.]

and march
to Wexford,
about
twelve
miles from
Banow.

The town-
men at first
resolve
to meet
them in the
field, but,
on seeing
their array,
retire
within the
city.

Whan this sekernesse was thus y-maked, pese twey maner
folkes, *with ooñ witt*, and *with ooñ hert*, *with Baners* 16
i-lacet, nam the wey toward weysford. The meñ of þe self toñ
wered̄ ywar of har commyng, and tok ham to rede—for þe tother
wered̄ so few, & day so many—that þay wold figth *with ham* in þe
pleyne felde. They cam̄ owt of the toñ arraied̄ on har maner; bot 20
whan þay sawe the Englismeñ, *with hors* I-helled̄ *with yreñ*
harnes, ham-self well I-wepned̄ *with haubergeons*, and Bright
helmes and sheldes, wicth the sawe neuer *per-to-for*, they toke
a-nother rede, and turned̄ ayeyñ to toñ; & all þat was *with-owt* þe 24
walles, thay sett a-fyr and brent, & redied̄ ham to hold ham
with-yne the wallys *with streynthe*. Robert *with* his meñ went
strongly for to assayñ to toñ, & sette the bowmeñ for to wer the
[*Fol. 2 b.] fight of the kernels; and turned̄ the wepned̄ meñ to fill þe *diches. 28
thay *with-yn* defendet ham stalwarthly *with stonnes* and stakes,
wher-of they wer I-warned̄; and wer many I-hurt whit-yn and eke
with-out, so that thay *with-out* mosten nedes leue of the assaut,
& withdraw ham. Among ham was a yong knyght þat het 32
Robert de Barry, þat drogh̄ yong blodes hete, and for hys
stalwardnes, reght nat of his lif: as he wold̄ *with* þe formoste
Barri has a passe ouer the wall, he hent a dynt *with* a greth stone vpon þe

ham to sayle at Seynt Dauyes, and londyd at the Banow in Irland, A.D. 1169.
 wel vnsykyr on euery syde. thay vnchargid har shippis, *and* made
 ham logis on londe *. Than was fulfillid a prophesy that Merlyn [*Fo1.2b.]
 seyde of this comynge: 'A knygh[t] with Party armys shall formyst
 breke the clos of Irland.' Such armys bare that Robert. He sent
 sone to Dermot Macmurgħ, and didde hym to vnderstand of his
 comynge; And thythyngis spronge forth sone Into al the londe, what
 Pepill was to hyñ coñe. And many of them that to-forid hym
 hadd forsake and lefte, *and* lytill seett by hym, comen sone to hym,
 So that he hadd gaderid v. C. men. / He went with this pepyll to
 the Englysh men; And when thay come to-geddre, euery of them
 was the gladdyr for othyr / Ther were the for-sayde conontis
 rehersyd *and* mevid betwen tham, and othis sworn, *and* sekyrnesse
 made, to conferme all the forsayde, as hit was ther-to-fore Purveyed
 be-fore the Prince of Walys.

[CHAPTER IV.]

WHAN this sekyrnesse was thus madd, this two maner Capitalum
 Pepyll, wyth on wyll, and with ood herte, with baners 4^m.
 lacyd, toke ther wey towardes weysford. The men of the toun
 weryn y-ware of thare comynge, *and* toke them to consayll,—for the
 othyr weryn so few, and thay so many,—that thay wolde figh[t] with
 ham in the Playn felde. Thay come out of the toun arrayed
 on ther maner; but when they sawe the Englysh men, with hors
 y-hellyd with Iryn harneys, ham-Selfe wel wepenyd with hauber-
 geons, and bryght Salletis and sheldys, whych thay sawe neuer
 there-to-forid, thay toke anothyr consayll, *and* turned ayayn to
 toun; and al that was with-out the wallis, thay sette afyre *and*
 brente; *and* arrayed tham to kepe ham with-In the wallis with
 Streynth. Robert, wyth his men, went Strongly to assaylle the
 toun, *and* sette the bowmen forto were the fyght of the
 cornelis, *and* turned the wepenyd men to fill the dichis. thay
 wythin defendyd ham boldely with Stones and Stakys, wher-of
 they were y-warnyd, [. . .] and mosten nedis lewe the assaute, and
 wythdrawe ham / Amonge ham was a yong knyght / whos name
 was Robert de barry, that, through yonge blodis hette, *and* for his
 boldnys, roght not to lesse the lyfe / As he wolde wyth the fryst
 Passe ouer the walle, he hadd a stroke with a grette stoñe vp-on
equestrem
 turmam
 loriciis et
 clipeis
 galeisque
 fulgenti-
 bus in-
 signem . . .
propugna-
 cula vero
 sagittariis
 eminus
 observanti-
 bus . . .
juvenili
 insultans
 calore . . .

A. D. 1169.
narrow
escape.

The assail-
ants of the
town burn
the ships
they find
on the
strand.

Next day,
the
townsmen
surrender.

Macmurgh
gives
grants
of land to
Maurice
Fitzgerald
and
Hervey of
Mount-
maurice.

heued al *with* the helme, þat he fel doun yn the ground of þe
dich; & vnnethes he was I-draw vp througħ his felowes, þat mych
put har lyf in aduentur for to saw his lif. The cry was well
gret on euery syde, for this knyght þat thus was I-hurt. Thay 4
with-drow ham fro the wallys and wenten ham to þe strond; and
all þe shippes þat pay þer fond, thay settene a-fyre. And .O. shippe
þer was, that was I-comd owt of Brittainne aftyr cheffar, and was
y-charget *with* whet & *with* wynes, and lay I-ancred in the 8
hauene: the best parte of the englismeñ wenteñ *with* bottes
and toke his shippe. þe shippmeñ werne many, and saw that þer
weren bot a few englys in the shippe, & the wynd was of þe lond;
thay cutte the cable of the ankre, and þe wynd bare the shippe 12
in toward the see: her fellowes saw this, and wenteñ *after with*
bottys; and vnnethe *with* rowyng, and *with* gret peril of all har
lyues, þay come ayeyn to lond. Macmorgh saw this, & wereñ
sore amaied, for thay wend neuer more þat on [of] ham shold haw 16
comd to lond a-lyue. The assaut was I-left all þat day. A-morowe,
whan masse was I-herd, al þe host þay wentene to the assaut
wislyere and warliere þan thay didden the day befor, and strusten
as well to sleght as to streynth. The mēn of the tōn sawē ham 20
commyng, and wer right soferd that day shold nat withstond
the assaute, and vndrestonden al-so that *with* wrong day holden
ayañ her lord; thay tok ham to red, and besoghten pees; &
drogh be-sechyngē of twe bissoppes, that þat tȳm weren *with*-yn 24
the touz, and other possible men al-so *with* ham, thay yolden
ham al to Macmor[gh]; and four hostages, the best þat he wold
chese, delyuered to hym for the pees, and trywly *with* hym for
to hold frome þat tȳm forward, as har kyndly lord. Macmorgh, 28
as wise & war, ffor-thy that he wold that þe out-commyn men
shold haw the bettre hert, and will, hym for to serue, he bethoght
þat, of the fyrst good aduentur þat hym was befall, þay that
best weren worthy shold hawe har parte, and þe host. Al þe 32
ton of weysford, *with* twey cantredes aller-next, he yaf to Robert,
steuenes sone, and to Morice fitz-Geraud, as forward was to-foer
maked; othere thwey cantredes he yaf heruy of Mountmorthy,—
neghest thay tweyn on the syd toward Waterford,—a knyght þat 36

the hedde al *with* the Sallet, that he fell down to the grovnde of the dyche ; *and* vnnethis he was vp-*rerid* through his fellowys, that myche Put har lyfe in aduerture forto sawe his lyfe. The cry was well grette on euery syde, for this knyght that thus was y-hurte. They wythdrow ham all from the wallis, *and* wenten to the stronde ; *and* al the Chippis that they ther found, thay setten a fyre. And oo shippe ther was, that was y-come out of Brytayne aftyr cheffare, *and* was y-chargid *with* whete and *with* wyne, *and* lay y-*ancred* in the Havyn. The beste Parte of the Englysh men wenten wyth botis, *and* toke this shippe : the Chippmen weryn many, *and* saw that ther weryn but a fewe Englysh men in the shippe, *and* the wynd was on the londe syde ; thay cvtte the Cabyls of the ancre, *and* the wynd bare the Chippe to-ward the see. Her Fellouys sawe this, *and* wentyn¹ aftyr wyth botis ; *and* vnnethe *with* rowyng, *and* wyth grette Perill of al there lyues, they come ayeyn to lond. Macmurgh saw this, *and* was sore aferde, for they wende neuer * more that one of Ham sholde haue come to Londe a-Lyue. The assaute Was Leste al that day. A-morrow, whan masse was herd, al the Oste the[n] wenten to the assaute wyslyer and waryr than thay diddyn the day to-fore, and trusten as well to sleght as to streynth. The men of the toune saw ham comynge, *and* were ryght sore aferde that thay ne sholde not wythstonde the assaut, *and* vndyrstodyñ also that *with* wronge thay heldyn ayeyñ her lorde. thay toke ham to consayll, *and* besoghten Pees ; *and*, through besechyng of two Bisshopis that that tyme weryn wythin the toun, *and* othir Pesibbill men also *with* ham, thay yoldyn ham al to Macmurgh ; *and* foure Hostagis, the beste that he wolde chese, delyuerid to hym for the Pees, *and* trewely wyth hym forto holde from that tyme forward, for har trew Lorde / Macmurgh, as wysse and ware, For cause that he wolde that the strangeres sholde haue the bettyr hert *and* will, hym forto serwe, he bethoght hym that, of the fryste good aduerture that to hym was fall, thay that best weryn worthy, they sholde haue there Parte, *and* the hegheste. All the toune of weysford, *with* twey cantredes alther-nexthe, he yafe to Robert Steuenes-son *and* to Moryce fiz-Geraud, as the Promes to-for was made / othyr twey cantredes he yafe Heruey of Montmvrthy,—nexe to thay two on the

A. D. 1169.

A Breton ship with wheat and wine is taken by English sailors.

The French cut their cables and set sail ; but the English are rescued.

[¹ went-
yntyn, MS.]

[*Fol. 3 a.]

The allies march to assault Wexford again ;

but it is yielded to them.

It is given to Fitz-Stephen and Fitz-Gerald.

A. D. 1169. com̄ in that same * flote, hym þriddesum of knyghtes, and com̄
[*Fol.3a.] progh̄ the Erle Richard, more for to spye the lond̄ than to fight.

[CHAPTER V.]

The united ¹ **W**han this was thus I-don al after hār will, they tok *with hame*
forces invade the folk of weysford̄, and wenten hānd toward̄ Ossery, with ⁴
Ossory, to the prince of which country Macmorogh was a bitter enemy. ferd̄ as myght by tre thousand mēn; and was than prince of
Ossory, Macdonenild̄; a mān þat was Macmorogh swith loth̄ and
all his mēn, for mych̄ shame that thay had hym i-do. At þe
begynnyng, as thay com̄ in-to the contrey, in narrow weys drogh̄ ⁸
woddes and mores, thay fonden the mēn of the contrey stalwarth̄
for to defend̄ hār lond̄; & mych̄ tene hānd didde, ar that day myght
[take] the pleyne; and eke into the pleyne thay folwed̄ hānd full
fresly. the horsmān saw this, and turned manly vp-on ham, & ¹²
anoon slown right many of hānd, & discomfited̄ hānd euerychone.
And thay þat þe horsmēn kest to ground̄ *with speres* and *with*
They defeat him, swerdes, þe yrisshe fotemēn smotene of the hedd̄es. Whan þe
slaght̄ was all I-do, and har enym̄es all ouer-comen, thay ¹⁶
broghten wēll ccc heudes², and kesten at Macmorogh feet. he
be-held̄ hānd, & tried euery of hānd by hānd-self, for to know hame,
& hild̄ vp his handes and tanked̄ god almyghty ful Inwardly.
Oon hede ther was, a-monge þe other̄, of a man that he ouer-dede ²⁰
and mych̄ hated; he name hit be the heēr and by the eers, and
with girslich̄ bit, as no mān ne oweth to done; *with his teeth*
and Macmurgh triumphs in a brutal way. he karue of his nose and both lippes. There-after þey wentēn
forther̄ into the contrey, slown, robeden, and branden full manly ²⁴
al þat hame withstonden, in-to the tyme the prince of Ossory, by
consaill of his mēn, send̄ to hānd, & be-soght pees: the pees was
graunted̄ whan he hit bysoght, vp-on good ostages, and othes
I-swēr, þat he, to his lord̄ Macmorgh̄, shold̄ be trew, and trowth ²⁸
hold̄, trywly serue fro that tyme forward̄. in these fightes as in
many other̄, thogh̄ that in the englishe host noon wēr bot good
and stalward̄, Robert þe Bar̄r and Meiler fiz-henry weren thay
that best deden. Thay weren both yong knyghtes, and Robert ³²
Steuenes-sonnes neues; the oon his brothēr sone, the other̄ his
susteres sone; of diuerse maners, both³ of hardnes & of stalworthnes

¹ a small w is inside the V.² heuedes, heads.³ but.

syde toward waturford¹,—a knyght that come in that same flitte, A.D. 1169.
 hym thyrdesum of knyghtes, and come throug the Erle Rychard, ¹ mari con- terminos.
 more forto spy the londe than to fyght.

[CHAPTER V.]

Whan this was thus don al aftyr har will, thay toke with Capitulum v^m.
 tham the Pepill of weysford; and wenten ham to-ward Ossory,
 with oste as myght be by thre Mt. men². And was than Prince of
 Ossory, Macdonenylde, a man that was myche be-hatyde of Mac- [² cum exercitu virorum quasi triuin milium.]
 murgh, for myche shame that thay hadd hym donne. At the
 begynnyng, as thay come into the contrey, in narrow weyes throug
 woddis and mores, thay foundyn the men of the contrey bolde forto
 defende har londe; and mych sorrow han didd; ar thay mygh[t]
 take the Playne: and when thay come to the Playne, thay folwid
 ham ful fresly. the hors-men saw this, and turned boldely vp-on
 ham, and anoone slowyn rygh[t] many of ham, and dys-comfited
 ham euerychoñ. And thay that the hors-men keste to ground
 wyth Sperys and wyth Swerdis, the Iryssh footte-men Smoten of 300 heads of foes are brought to Mac- murgh.
 the hedis. Whan the slaght was al y-do, and har ennemys al
 ouer-come, thay broghten wel ccc. hedis, and kesten at Macmurgh
 is fete. he behylde ham, and turned euery of tham³ by hym-Selfe [³ than, MS.]
 forto know tham, and hilde vp his handis, and thankyd almyghty
 god ful Inwardly. Oone hede ther was, amonge the othyr, of a man
 that he gretly dreddid and myche hatid; he toke hit by the heeres
 and by the Ers, and grymly hit bitte, as no man sholde haue down;
 wyth his tethe he kutte of his nose and bothe lippis. Ther-aftyr He bites off the nose and lips of one.
 they wenten fourdyr Into the contrey, kildyn, robodyn and brandyn
 ful boldely al that ham wythstodyn, into the tyme the Prynce of
 ossory, by consaylle of his men, sent to ham, and besoght Pees. the
 Pees was graunted whan he hit be-soght, vp-on good Ostagis, and
 othis y-Sworñe, * that he, to His Lord Macmurgh, shold be trewe, His men kill, rob, and slay, till Mac- donough sues for peace. [*Fol.3 b.]
 and trowth Hold, and trewely Serwe fro that tyme forth. In this
 fyghtes as in many othyr, thoght that in the Englysh hoste noone
 were but good and bolde, Robert de barry and Meyler fiz-henry
 weryn thay that best diddyn: they wer both yong knyghtes, and
 Robert Steuenes-sones emys⁴ both, the one his brodyr sonne, the ⁴ neveux, nepotes.
 othyr his Systyr Sonne; Of dyuers maners, but of hardynes and

A. D. 1169. mostdele al I-lých; ffor Meyler was a mañ that ouer mych
 desyred to be I-preisede, and þat meñ sholden mych speke of
 his stalwardnes, and preisen hym. Robert was kýndlye, hardy,
 [*Fol.3 b.] & stalwarde, *and euer with the forthmost in euery fight and 4
 in euery peril, bot he hatede notyng so mych as that me
 shold speke of his stalwardnes, ne hyme preiese. The whill the
 host was thus in Ossory, befel þat þay wereñ a nyght I-loget
 in an old castell, & aboute; and these tweyn, as hañ wone was, 8
 weren both I-hosted to-gedderes: ffeñ with-yn nyght come an
 host vp-on ham, of so mych folk as thegh hit were fele thousand,
 on euery side smýtynge vp the host as they wolden in wode
 raas ferly ouersaif hame, al, with wepne ryngyng, speres and 12
 sparthes ruthlyng to-geddre, with cryng so grysly that noon
 ende was of helf fañ, as ¹hoft-sithes was wonet to be-fall in ostynges
 in Irland; of whiche frightnes the most parte of the oste was so
 aferd, that þay flowe ² and hidden hañ, some in wodnes, som in 16
 mores. These twey stalward mēñ henten hañ wepene, & lep to
 hors, and wenten a-noon to Robertes tentes, (Steuenes sone,) and
 cryed vp-on hañ felowes þat day sholden withstond, and tak hert
 to hame, and defend ham-self; bot few theñ weñ that so diden, 20
 til they saw that this crie and þe noise was all I-left, & nas
 bot fantasy. Whan the host hem gaddred ayayn to-geddre, thay
 weñ full soñ ashamet that thay so argly put ham to f[l]ight, and
 mych speche was amonge ham, and maný, hadden gret enuy, and 24
 mych wonder toght of Robert de barñ, that whan the host was
 in so gret frightnes, he was that mañ þat stydfastly most hym
 held, and most hym entised for to withstond and fight; and
 amonge all the goode thewes that in hym weren, þis inamliche is 28
 i-told of hym, that for no violence ne ferly aduentur þat hym
 myght betid, he was neuer whan-hopefully argh, ne aferd, ne
 amayed of hert, ne shamefully ne didde hym to flight, bot euer
 moñ he was I-lich redy to weppen and to defend hym-self, and 32
 to helpen all oper; he the formost knyght that in this conqueste
 of Irland first receyued dynt and hurtýng in battaill. A wonder
 was of that fantasye: A-morowe whañ hit was day, I the place,
 ther this folk I-seye smýten vp-on hame, the wedes and the grase 36

A phantom
 army at
 night
 creates
 terror
 among the
 English;

[¹ MS.
 host.]

[² MS.
 slowe.]

but Meiler
 and
 de Barri
 manfully
 withstand
 the panic.

Character
 of Robert
 de Barri.

boldnys mostdele al y-lyke. For Meyler was a maū that gretly A.D. 1169.
 desyrd' to be Praysid', and that men shold myche Speke of his
 boldnys, and Preysyn hym. / Robert was kyndly, hardy and bold,
 and euer with the fryst in euery fyght / and in euery Perill; but *nec*
 he hatyd' nothyng so myche as that a man sholde speke of his *laudis*
 boldnys, ne hym Preyse. / The whyll the hoste was thus in Ossory, *eractor,*
 befell that thay weryn a-nyght y-logid' in an olde castell, and aboute. *nec aurae*
 And thus two, as they wer wonyd', weryn in one Plase to-gedderis. *popularis*
 Fer *with*-in nyght, come an hoste vp-on ham of so mych Pepill, as *aucupator.*
 they wer many thowsandis, on euery syde Smytynge vp the hoste, *A phantom*
 as they woldyn, in wode raas, fersly ouersayle hame al, wyth wepyū *host*
 ryngynge, Speris and sparris rutlyng to-giddy, wyth cryng so *[tanquam*
 grymly, that none ende was Of elf fare, as ofte-tymes was wonet to *in impetu*
 befall in hostyngis in Irland'. Of whych ferde, the moste Parte of *furoris*
 the Oste was so a-dred', that they flow and hiddyn ham; somme in *sui cuncta*
 woddis, some in mores / This two bolde men token har wepyn, and *devoran-*
 lepe to hors, and wentyn anone to Robert Steuenes-sonne, and cried *timu]*
 on har fellowis that 'they sholdyn wytstond', and take herte to hame, *frightens*
 and defende ham-Selfe; but fewe were that so diddyū, tyll they saw *the*
 that this cry and this noyse was al cessed', and nas but a fantasy. *English-*
 whan the host them gaderid' ayeyn to-giddy, they wer ful sore *men, who*
 asshamyd' that thay so fently Put ham to flyght; and mych Speche *run and*
 was amonge hame; and many haddyn gret enuy, and mych wondyr *hide;*
 thought of Robert de Barry, that Whan the host was in so gret ferde, *but are*
 he was that man that moste stidfastly hym helde, and moste them *much*
 styrrid' to wythstond' and fyght. / And amonge al the good' dedis *ashamed*
 that in hym weryn, this Pryncipaly is of hym tolde, that for no *when they*
 vyolence ne ferly aduenture that to hym chanssyd', he was neuer in *find it was*
 wanhope sette, ne agaste, ne aferd', ne abassid' of herte, ne shame- *all fancy.*
 fully did hym to flyght; but euer-more he was lyke redy to wepyn,
 and to defend' hym-Selfe, And to helpyn al othyr. he was the
 formyst knyght that, in this conqueste of Irland', fryst receyued' *in hac*
 stroke and hurte in bataill // A wondyr was of that fantasy *Hiberniae*
 a-morrow, whan hit was day: In the Playn ther this Pepill y-seye *expugna-*
tionē.

¹ Cujusmodi phantasma in Hibernia circa expeditiones frequens esse solebat.

—Op. v. 235.

A.D. 1169. that stoden al euen vp-right, thay lay all I-drow a-doune and I-cast to grond. [*This grass, &c. only in Harl. MS. 177. Op. v. 236.*]

[CHAPTER VI.]

[*Fol. 4a.] **A**s this was on this maner I-doñ, the tythynge sprongen in-to al Irland hwow Macmorgħ conquered his lond * vpon 4 his men, and that no man myght hym withstond for out-comen men that he lade with hym. Roryk O'Concow of Connaght, that was that tȳm kynge of al Irland, vndrestod hȳm, and toght in his hert the gret peril that myght be-fall hȳm and al the 8 lond folk, drogh the owt-comen folk þat was thus in-to the land I-coñ; he sent his messagers to al the gret meñ of the lond, and in a lityll whitt gaddred ham to-geddre to a parlement, and tok ham to rede that euery on his half shold gaddre al the 12 power þat they myght, for to weř vpon Macmorgħ. And as hit was purueied, so hit was doñ; Thay asseblet so many hostes and so mych folk on euery half, that noon end was, and comeñ to Okensely for to weren vpon Macmorgħ. Whan this hostes 16 weren thus asseblet, the most parte of Macmorghis meñ, ayeine hař trowth and ayejn hař othes, some priuely whithdraw hem that day, nold nat to hym com, some al openly leften hȳm, and wenten to his fomen ayeyn hȳm; so that, in his most nede, trew 20 frendes ne fonde he non, sawe Robert, steuenes soñ, and his. With the lityll folk that thay hadden, thay wenten in-to a place nat fer frome fernes, a plejn place bisette about with montaignes and woddes, watres and mores, on euery side il to coñ [to]. the 24 entrees that ther weren, by Robert-is deuce thay setten meñ for to stopen, in some place with trees I-cast doñ, and in other places depe diches I-cast. thegh the place weř stronge of kynde, thay madeñ hit mych stronge[r] with engyn, so that hit was 28 I-now seker recet to hañ, and [to] heř enemyes ful strong to coñ to, and with litill folke hit myght be I-kept; & derne weies thay hadden purueied to hañ-self, owt to goo, ayeyn In to coñ, whan hañ liked. Whane the kynge of Connaght, with so many 32 hostes, was to hañ I-coñ, he send to Robert by Messangers, and present hȳm with ryche yiftes, and many mo he hym be-het, and fast hȳm be-soght that, owt of þe Contray, wyche no Right

Roderic O'Conor tries to raise the whole country against Macmurgħ and the English.

Many of Macmurgħ's followers desert him, but Fitzstephen and his men stand by him.

They occupy a strong position not far from Ferns.

smytyn vp-on ham, the wedis and the grasse that stodyn al enyn A D. 1169. vp-ryght, thay lay al y-throw dovne *and* cast to ground.

[CHAPTER VI.]

As this was thus donne, the thythyngis Spronge Into al ^{Capitulum} Irland, how Macmurgh conquerid his londe vpon his men, ^{vjm.} *and* that no man myght hym wythstond, for strange men that he ladd wyth *Hym. Roryke Oconghoure, of Connaght, that was [*Fol. 4 a.] that tyme Kyng of al Irland, vndyrstode hym, and thocht in his herte the grete Perel that myght be-fall hym *and* al the londe- ^{tam sibi} Pepill, through the *strangeres* that was thus in-to the lande coñe. ^{quam} He sende his messengeris to al the Lordis of the Londe, *and* in a ^{patriae} lytyll whylle gaddred ham to-gedre to a parlement, *and* toke ham ^{toti.} to consayll, that euery on his Syde sholde gaddyr al the Pepill that thay myght, forto werre vpon Macmurgh. And as hit was Purueyed, so hit was down. Thay assemblid so many Hostis, *and* so mych Pepill on euery syde, that were vnnowmmerabil, and comyn¹ to Okenseley forto werre vp-on Macmurgh / Whan this ^{[¹ comyn,} hostis weryn thus assemblet, the moste parte of Macmurgh-ismen, ^{MS.]} ayeyn here trowthe and here othis, Some priuely *with*-drow ham, that they nolde not to hym come. Some al opynly leften hym, *and* wenten to his ennemys ayeyn hym ; so that, in his moste nede, ^{in necessi-} trewe frendis ne fownde he noñe, Sawe Robert Steuenes-Sone ^{tatis} *and* his. wyth the Lytill Pepill that they haddyn, thay wentyn into ^{articulo} a place not fare frome Fernys, a pleyne place be-sette aboute *with* monttanyes and woddis, watris and moris², on euery Syde il to come ^{paludibus.} to. The entrees that ther weryn, by Robert-is deuyce thay setten men forto stopyn ; in some Place *with* trees y-caste doune, and in othir Placis depe dichis y-caste. thegh the Place were stronge of ^{naturalem} kynd, thay maddyñ hit mych strongir *with* Engyn, So that hit was ^{difficul-} sure recette to tham, and to ther ennemys stronge to come to, and ^{tatem in-} *with* lytill pepill hit myght be kepte. And Erthe-weyes thay ^{dustria} haddyn madd to tham-Selfe, out to goo, and ayeyn In to come, ^{plurimum} when them Plesyd. Whan the kyng of connaght, *with* so many ^{et arte} hostis, was to tham come, he sende to Robert by Messangers, *and* ^{munivit.} presentid hym *with* rych yeftys, *and* mych more hym Promysyd, and gretly hym besoght that, out of the contrey, whych no ryght

A. D. 1169. he ne hadde to, ne no chalange ne myght setten vp-on, he and his, with pees and lou[e] shold departe. Mich they spek of this, and litell thay sped. Ther-aftyꝛ, the messagers turned to Mac-
 Roderic urges Fitz-
 stephen to retire from the country,
 [*Fol. 4b.]
 and, failing in this, tries in vain to induce Macmurgh against the English.
 O'Conor addresses his followers,
 and denounces the poisonous Macmurgh.
Patriam itaque tuentes, et libertatem
 [1 MS. best.]

he ne hadde to, ne no chalange ne myght setten vp-on, he and his, with pees and lou[e] shold departe. Mich they spek of this, and litell thay sped. Ther-aftyꝛ, the messagers turned to Mac-
 Roderic urges Fitz-
 stephen to retire from the country,
 [*Fol. 4b.]
 and, failing in this, tries in vain to induce Macmurgh against the English.
 O'Conor addresses his followers,
 and denounces the poisonous Macmurgh.
Patriam itaque tuentes, et libertatem
 [1 MS. best.]

and litell thay sped. Ther-aftyꝛ, the messagers turned to Mac-
 Roderic urges Fitz-
 stephen to retire from the country,
 [*Fol. 4b.]
 and, failing in this, tries in vain to induce Macmurgh against the English.
 O'Conor addresses his followers,
 and denounces the poisonous Macmurgh.
Patriam itaque tuentes, et libertatem
 [1 MS. best.]

that he forth, with hañd, shold turne vp-on the owt-comen folk, hañd to slee and vndo. And if he so wold, thay wold delyuer hym al leynestꝛ, and stidfast pees and frend-shippe mak hym haue of the kyng and of all other. Many reisons thay shewed, both for the land & for the land folk; bot notynge thay ne spedde, ne noon answaꝛ ne hadden, that ham liket. Oconghouꝛ saw and herd of his Messagers that he myght nat in such maner spede, and that he most with streynth do, that he myght nat with fair speche: he tok his wepne grymly, and stod vp a-monge his folk, and thus sayd to hañd; "Mighty meñ, and stalward in fight for to defende your lond and your franchise! vndrestondeth, ayeiñ whice folk, and for what encheson, ye sholl this battaill tak an hond: al oure enemy, that afor thus was owt of lond I-dryw for his wykkednesse, In commune confusioñ of vs all, al be-tak with owt-comen & wepned folk, is ayayñ comen for enuy and harme of vs, & hath I-broght vnked folk vp-on vs, that the harme wicth he had no power to don vs hym-self, throgth helpe of hañd & mayntenance, the better myght brynge to end; and hath dight hem to sheden his attyꝛ so wide, that he rechet nat of his owñ deth, bot that al mowen have ouꝛ bale troghe hym, and for noon shold be I-spared, and he ne spared hym-self. Ther-for we willen withstond the begynynge, and þe yuel whil hit is comyn, ar hit be Iroted; ffor harme wexet euer with longe abiddynge. Our lond & ouꝛ fredom defended we manly; so that the slaght of pese fewe be ferdnesse to many; & be ensample of these, al other out-lond meñ to be adrede, such folies to begyn, and the mynd of vs, with-out end to rest¹."

[CHAPTER VII.]

Macmurgh harangues the men of Leinster.

Macmurgh, on his halue, be-held his meñ, and saw hañd soꝛ amayed: with wordes that he myght, he confortd hañd on this maner: "Men of leynester, which, sothfast trowth & stidfaste kynd in al aduentures, vs hath felawes I-maked,

he hadd' therto, ne no calange ne myght setten vpon, he *and* A. D. 1167.
 his, wyth Pees and loue, sholde deperte. Mych¹ they spoke of [¹ Myth, MS.]
 this, and lytyll thay Spede / There-aftyr, the messengers turned
 to Macmurgħ, and be-soghten hym on the kyngis be-halfe, Ocon-
 noghoure, that he forth, wyth tham, sholde turne vpon the strangeres, *ut in*
 hame to kyll and vndo. And yf he so wolde, thay wolde delyuyr *exteris*
 hym all leynystere, *and* stydfaste Pees *and* frendshippe make hym *nationes*
 haue of the kyng and of al othyr. Many reysonys thay shewid, *delendas*
 both for the londe and for the lond-pepill; but nothyng they ne *simul cum*
 spede, ne noone answe hadde, that ham Plesyd. Oconnoghoure *ipsis arma*
 saw and herde of his messyngers, that he myght nat in suche *conver-*
 maner spede, and that he moste *teret.*
 myght not *with* fayre speche. He toke his wepyn grymly, and
 stode vp amonge his pepill, and thus sayde to tham:—"Myghty
 men, and bolde in fyght forto defende youre londe and youre *patriae*
 fredome! Vndyrstondyth, ayeynd whych *Pepill, and for whate [¹Fol. 4 b.]
 cause, ye sholde this Bataill take on Honde. Al oure ennemy, *tutores, et*
 that afor this was out of londe ydrywe for his wickidnes, In *libertatis.*
 comynne confusion of vs all, all be-take wyth strangeres and
 wepened Pepyll, is ayeyn comyn, for Enuy and harme of vs, and
 hath broght strange Pepill vp-on vs, that the harme whych he *quod,*
 hadde no Powere to don vs hym-selfe, throug helpe of them and *cunctis*
 mayntenavnce, the bettyr myght brynge to ende; and hath dyght *communi*
 hym to shedyn his wenym so wyde, that he takyth no fors to dye, *labe in-*
 but that we al mow haue oure [e]will throug hym, and for none *fectis, ut*
 sholde be Sparid, and he ne Sparyth hym-Selfe. There-for we will *nemini*
 wy[th]stonde the begynnyng, and the Perel whyle hit is comyn, are *purcatur,*
 hit be rotyd. For harme wexeth euer wyth longe abydyng. Oure *nec ipse*
 londe and oure fredome, defende we manly; So that the slaght *sibi*
 of this fewe be ferde to many; and by Ensampill of thes, al othyr *pepercit.*
 strangers sholde be aferde, suche folies to begynne, And the mynde *exterar*
 of vs, wyth-oute ende to abyde." *nationes*
ab ausu
tam
nefario
imper-
petuum
abstru-
antur.

[CHAPTER VII.]

MAcemurgħ / on his syde, be-held his men, *and* Sawe hame *Capitulum*
 sore a-bassyd. with wordis that he myght, he confortid *vij^m.*
 ham on this manere: "Men of leynyster, wych, trusty trouth and *comites*
 stydfaste kynde in al aduentures, vs hath fellowis y-made, wyth- *indivisos*

A. D. 1169. without any partyng, a-rei we our hertes, styfly vs-self to defend. The maistre of wreth and of Coueytise, that with streynth wold vs brynge vnderfoot, and ows ayeyn dryue out of lond, othei, that Let us defend ourselves! wors is, in the same lond, vs tynken vndo: that god shild! loo, he 4 is I-com vpon our hed, of his mych gaderynge of folke prout & hauteyn. be ye well vndrestond, þat nat trogh gret tale of men [*Fol. 5a.] ne trogh greth streynth, both drogħ *right and trowth that mañ Right, not numbers, win battles. hath with hym, battailles doth ouercom. We haue for vs, ayeynd 8 haʔ pryð, mekenes; ayayns har vnryght, right and trowth; ayeyn haʔ boldenese and ouer-truste, mekenesse and maner. Thay fighten for coueytise, for to get good; and we, for to flee harme. with al this we bene in strong place and wel I-warned. The moʔ 12 that heʔ commeth, the more encombrement we shall do hame, by lityll folk ham to ouercom, so that we be of on hert, and stifly Be of one heart, and fight! withstond.’

[CHAPTER VIII.]

Fitzstephen makes a speech to the Englishmen.

Whan Macmorghe had his tale I-endeth in his speche, 16 Robert Steuenes-son, spake to his felaws and to his meigne on this wise: “fightyng fors, & yongelynges I-corne, that so many perilles hawe to-gedde I-soffred, and euer in al aduentures, and of heigh hert ibe! If we inly vndrestonde wiche 20 men we ben, with what lodes-mañ, and for what thyng we this perille vndre-tok with stalwardnesse, as our [wone]ys, we shullen ouercome; & the grace that ye I-haue i-hadde ar this of god, ne shal vs nat forlete. Of the folke of Troy we ben kyndlych y-come, on þat 24 oon half, fro þe first begynnyge; of ffrance, we haue kynde on othei half. Throgh kynd of Troy, we owe to be hardy; throgh kynd of ffrance, we ben vsed in wepene; & so as we bene of double mane kyndly, of good herth & well y-wepned, & well y-lernet yn 28 wepne, ne dout no man, þat such vnwepned rascayll any power haw ows to wythstond: on that othei halue, we come nat yn-to thys land as hyryng men, ne for no couetyse of gold, ne of syluy, ne galyotz ne robbers; bott for to helpe thys heyth man that ys so 32 noble & so fre, &, progh hys owne men, lodderly was of lond y-dryue. we hawe reuth of hys harm; & helpeth vp þat adoun was y-brozthe; to hys kynd sted, bryngeth hym þat vnkyndly was

From Troy we get boldness; from France, skill in fight. We come not for hire, or as pirates, but to help a noble man unjustly treated.

out eny partynge, arrere we vp oure hertes, boldely vs to defende. A. D. 1169.
 The maystyr of wreth *and* of couetyse, that wyth streynth wolde ^{1 the}
 vs brynge vndyrfote, and vs ayeyn dryue out of londe, Othir, that ^{oration}
 wors is, in the same londe Purposyth vs to vndo / that god ^{[in a later}
 forbedde / be-holde, here is come vp-on oure hedd, of his mych ^{hand].}
 gadrynge of pepill Proute and hauteyn. be ye wel vndyrstond, ^{quod}
 that not wyth many men, ne wyth grete Streynth, bot by ryght ^{absit}
and trouth that man hath wyth hym, batalis doth ouercome. We
 haue for vs, ayeyn har pryde, mekenys; ayeynes hare vnryght, ryght
and trouth; ayeyn har boldnys *and* ouer-truste, mekenesse *and* ^{modus et}
 maner. thay fyghtyn for couetyse, forto gete good; And we, to ^{modestia.}
 shonne myschefe. wyth all this, we byth in stronge Place, and well ^{tam arte}
 warnyd. The more that here comyth, the more encombrement ^{quam}
 we shal do ham, by lytill folke ham to ouercome, So that we be of ^{natura}
 oñe herte, *and* styfly wystone. ^{munitissimi-}
^{um.}

[CHAPTER VIII.]

WHen Macmurghe hadd his tale y-edyd in his speche, ^{Capitulum}
 Roberte Steuenes-Sofe spake to his fellowys, *and* to them ^{viiij^m.}
 in this maner Sayde: "Fyghten feris, *and* yonglynges y-know, that ^{Bellorum}
 so many Perelis haue to-geddyr Sofferid; and cuer in al aduentures, ^{socii,}
 and of hey hert ben! If we Inwardly wndyrstonde what men we ^{adole-}
 ben; wyth what lodes-man, *and* for what thyng, we this Perel ^{scutes}
 vndirtoke; *with* boldnys, as we were wonyd, we shall ouercome; and ^{electi.}
 the grace that we haue hadd ar this of god, ne shall vs not forsake.
 // Of* the folke of Troy we Ben Kynly come, on that one syde, fro ^[*Fol. 5 a.]
 the fryste begyn[i]nge; of Fraunce, we haue kynde on the othyr
 halfe. Through the kynde of troy, we sholde be bolde; through
 kynde of Fraunce, we ben wsyd in wepyd; and so as we ben of
 doubil maner kyndly, of good herte *and* wel wepenyd, and wel
 lernyd in wepyñ,—ne dout no man, that Suche vnwepenyd rascail ^{populum}
 any Powere haue to vs to wyth-stonde. One that ouer syde, we ^{inermem.}
 come not into this londe as wagicd men, ne for no couetyse of
 golde, ne of Syluyr, ne of galiotz, ne robbers; but forto helpe
 this goode man that is so nobill and so fre, and, wyth his owyn
 men, wickydly was out of his londe drywe. We haue Pite of his
 harme; and helpyth vp that adouñ was caste / to his kynde state, ^{Non ergo}
^{piratue,}
^{non prae-}
^{dones huc}
^{aduenimus.}

A.D. 1169.

He has given us land.

[1 MS. over.]

We'll win the battle and glory.

theŕ-of I-bansbeth. And he, as largh mañ & good prynce, hat vs yeueñ wyde londes & ryche townes, & owŕ lond folke wyll setten & planten stydfastly yu þys lond, nowe & cuer¹. Therfor, men, full [of] streynth & stalwarthnes, such thyng̃ y-magýneth 4 to-day hartly to do, that owŕ kynred ne go nat out of kynd; & yu thýs, lyuynge oþer dey, we manly wyñ the pryce, that euer more torne to whyrshyppe vs & al ouŕ that aftyŕ ws shullen come.”

[CHAPTER IX.]

8

O'Conor, doubtful of the issue, makes terms with Mac-

[*Fol.5b.]

who, it is agreed, shall hold from Roderic, and give him his son as a hostage.

Wythe these wordes, & otheŕ suche, these heghe meñ comforted haŕ folk, for day schuldeñ hawe the bettyr wyll well for to fyght. And whañ day were oñ euery half redy for to smyth to-geddre, OConozwýr, be-thozghthýng that the aduentur 12 of battaylle ben ofte doutouse & mjche vncerteýne, And as the whysmañ seythe 'all tynge me shall assay, rather thañ fy3th,' & all-so he & hys doutendeñ well scere to assemble wíth folke [I-wepned; On al maner that he myzght, * He was abowte thame 16 sholde make peas. thane, throg̃h besechyng̃ of goode menð that went betwene, & throg̃h grace of the holy goste, was the peas y-made, oñ þis maner; that thay sholde leue leynester to Maccmorghowe, & he sholde hitt holde of Oconoghur, & 20 hym knowlech, & suget be to hym as to a kyng & prynce of Irland. And þat thys shold be stydfastly I-hold, Macmorgh býtok hym hýs sone to astage, by so, þat yf he good pees hold, & trewly hym helde, Oconghur shold hym yeue hys doghter to 24 wyff. Whañ thys was comynly I-shewed & I-knowe, & othes I-shwerne oñ euery half, all thýs trewly to hold, Another thyng was bespoke bytween ham, bott þat preuely, that Macmorgh ne shold nomore brynge vnked mon yn-to the lond, & thay that 28 he hade y-broght, as rathe as he had leynestre yñ good pees, he shold anoon send ayenne home, & delyueryd þe lond of ham.

[CHAPTER X.]

Maurice Fitzgerald now arrives, with a following, at Wexford.

Aftyŕ that þe pees was thys Imaket, þe host departed, euery oñ hýs half. Sone þer-after come Moryce, Geraudes 32 soñ, Robertes brotheŕ, of whom we spokeñ ar thys, wyth .x. knýghtes & .xxx. Squyres & ij houndred footmen, & ar[y]ued at weysford;

bryngyth hym that vnkynedly was therof y-banshet. And he, A. D. 1169.
 as large man and good Prince, hath vs yevyð wyde landis and gentem hic
 nostram in
 insula
 plantare.
 seu vin-
 cculo seu
 moriendo
 perpetuam
 nobis
 gloriam
 strenuitate
 compa-
 remus.
 ryche townes; and oure londe-pepill will setten and Planteð
 stydfastly in this londe, nowe and euer. Therfor, men full of
 streynth and of boldnes, Suche thyngē ymagyneth to-day hertely
 to do, that oure kynred ne go not oute of kynde; and in this,
 lywe or dye, we manly wynn the Pryce, that euer-more shall
 tour[n]e to oure wyrchippe, and to al oure that aftyr vs schalle
 come."

[CHAPTER IX.]

Wyth this wordis, and othyr Suche, thes good men confortyd Capitulum
 ix^m.
 here Pepill, for thay sholdyn haue the bettyr wyll, well
 forto fyght. And when thay were on euery halfe redy forto smyte
 to-geddre, Oconghoure bethoght hym that the aduenture of bataill
 ben ofte doutfull and mych vncertayn. An[d], as the Wysman
 Seyth, "Althynge we oghte to assay, radyr than fyght" / And also
 he and his douteden well sore to fyght wyth Pepill wepenyd. On al
 maner that he myght, he was besy to haue Pees. Then, by the
 besechynge of good men that wente betwene, and throug grace of
 the holy goste, was the Pees mad on this maner; that thay sholde
 leue leynystere to Macmurgh, and he sholde hite holde of Ocon-
 ghoure, and hym knowlech, and Subiecte be to hym as to a kynge
 and Prynce of Irland. And that this sholde be stydfastly holde,
 Macmurgh toke hym his sone to hostage, by So, yf he good Pees filium
 suum
 Cnu-
 churum.
 helde, and trewely hym helde, Oconghoure sholde hym yeue his
 doghter to wyfe. whan this was comynly shewyd and know, and
 othis sworð on euery Syde, al this trewely to kepe, Anothyr thyngē
 was spokyn be-twen them, bothe that Pryuely, that Macmurgh ne
 sholde no more strangeres brynge into the londe; And thay that
 he hadd broght, as Sone as he hadd leynystere in good Pees, he statim
 remitteret.
 shold Sende them home, and delyuere the londe of hame.

[CHAPTER X.]

Aftyr that the Pees was thus made, the hoste departyd, on Capitulum
 x^m.
 his halue. Sone there-aftyr come Morice, Geraudis Sonne *, [*Fol. 5 b.]
 Robert-is Brodyr, of whom we Spokyn ar this, Wyth x Knyghtis
 and xxx^{ti} Squyeris, and two hundred fotemen, and londid at

A. D. 1169.

A man full queynt, trow trogh al thyng, & stalwarth, & stydfast of word, & of hert symple, & shamffast as a mayd. Wañ *Macmorgh* & Robert hyt wysten, thay weren ful glād, & boldeñ þan thay before were : thay come to ham sone wyth þe oste þat thay had. 4

Macmorgh determines to attack Dublin; and goes, accompanied by Fitzstephen.

Macmorgh be-thoght hym of the mych vnryght that þe men of deuelyng hym hadden done, & hys fader all-so, many siþe : he assembled hys hostes, & redied hym to wend thedere. Boot Robert byleft *with* somdell of þe meyne, fore to rere hym a castell 8 at a place that me clepeth þe karryke, & ys twey myle out of weysford ; & Moryce went wyth hym. *Macmorgh*, as mayster & leder of the host, & cheuetayn of al. In lytell whyle, all þe contreys about dyuelyn, wyth robynge & bernyng & sleyn, 12 weren¹ neght I-broght to noght. The sitezeyns of dyuelyn, whan thay thys wysten, thay sentten to ham, & besoghten pees, & yaue ham so mych gold & syluer that non end was at har wylle, & good ostages, & othes I-[s]wore that þay sholden to *Macmorgh* 16 trew be, & hym knowleche þan-forward as lord & prynce. Fro that tyme that thys was y-do, ther was noon Iryshman yn leynnesteñ, of hey kyne ne of low, that for seruesse² of englyssemen ne yeldet hym to *Macmorgh*, so þat þer was noght of þe 20 lond-folke þat all nas subyett to hym, & redy to hys wylle.

[¹ MS. wepen.]

The citizens submit and acknowledge *Macmorgh* as their lord. [² for ferdnesse?]

[CHAPTER XI.]

O'Conor makes war on O'Brien of Limerick

IN thys whyle, wax a grett wreth & a grete stryfe betwix þe kyng of Connaght, & donoll Obreyñ, þe kyng [of] *lymeryke*, & of thomond. the kyng of connaght, Oconoghur, gaddered hys 24 hostes for to werñ vpon Obreen. Obreen sent * to mamorrowz, for allyaunce that was betwen ham, that he shold hym helpe. he spake *per-of* to Robert & to Moryce, & bad ham that þay shold go theder for to helpe Obreen. Thay name har meñ wyth ham, & wenten 28 ynto thomond, and ffondeñ Oconoghur, that stryffly stode ayeyñ ham, & many fyghtes ham yaue. Bot the dysconfitur turned vpon Oconoghur, & many of hys meñ wer I-sleyñ, so that wythe shame he most turne ayeyñ ynto Connaght. And fro that tym, Obreen 32 wythdrow hym from Oconoghur, & neuer after was subyect to hym as he was thar-by-fore ; & the englysh hoste, wyth grett gettynges & *with* rych yiftes, turned ayeyne yñ-to leynestre.

[*Fol. 6a.]

and sends Fitzstephen and Maurice to oppose him.

O'Conor is defeated, and O'Brien becomes independent of him.

weysford. A man full quent, trew throw al thyng, bolde, and stydfaste of word, *and* of hert sympil, and shamefaste as a mayd // Whan *Macmurgh* and Robert hadd' wyttynge of Morice-is comynge, they weryn full glad, and boldyr than thay before were. thay came to thaim Sone wyth the hoste that thay hadde / *Macmurgh* bethoght hym of the mych wronge that the men of Deuelyn to hym hawydyn done, and his fadyr also, many tymys : he assemblid his hostes, *and* made hym redy thedyr forto goo. But Robert lefte wyth some of the meynge forto rere hym a castel at a Place that is callid' the Karryke, and is two myle out of weysford; And Morice went wyth hym. *Macmurgh* as gouernoure and ledere of the hoste and capytan of all. In lytell Processe of tyme, al the contreis about deuelyn, wyth Robynge and brennyng and kyllynge of pepill, weryn al-meste broght to nocht // The Citseyns of deuelyn, whan thay of this had wyttynge, thay Sendyn besoght Pees, and yaue hame so myche golde and Siluyr that none ende was at har will, and good hostagis, *and* othis Sworne that thay Sholdyn to *Macmurgh* be trewe, *and* hym knowlege as lord and Prynce. Fro that tyme that this was done / ther was none Irysh-man in leynystre, of hey kyn ne of low, but that, for fere of Englysh-men, thay yaue hame to *Macmurgh*, So that ther was none of the londe-pepill, that al nas subiecte to hym, and redy to his wille /

[CHAPTER XI.]

IN this tyme, rose grete debate and wrete be-twyxe the kyng of Connaght, and Donalde Obreyn, the kyng of limerike, and of thomonde. the kyng of Connaght, Oconghoure, gaderid' his hostes forto werre vp-on obreyn. Obreyn Sende to *Macmurgh*, for allyaunce that was betwen ham, that he sholde hym helpe. He Spake therof to Robert *and* to Morice, *and* bade them that th[a]y sholde go thedyr forto helpe obreyn. Thay, and har men wyth hame, *and* wentyn Into thomonde, and foundyn oconghoure, that styfly stode a-yennes hame, *and* many fightes hame yaue. But the dis-comfyture turned' vp-on oconghoure; *and* many of his men were sleyn, So that wyth shame he mvste tvrne into connaght. / And fro that tyme, Obreyn wythdrowe hym from oconghoure, and neuer aftyr was subiecte to hym as he was ther-to-forn. And the Englysh hoste, wyth grete gettynges *and* wyth ryche yftis, turned' ayen Into Leynystre.

A. D. 1169.

graves
Dubli-
nensium
injurias.ad exter-
minium
fere
redacto.Capitulum
xj^m.
[Fol. 6 a.]post
varios
conflictus
ubique
victoria
potitus.

[CHAPTER XII.]

A. D. 1169.
Macmorugh
aspires to
be king of
all Ireland.

Macmorogh sawe the englysshe-men so stalwarth that no power myght ham wythstond. he bethoght hym of thyng that was passed, & that sume of hys eldre to-fore hym hadde somtyme the kyng-dome of all Irland; & that al the lond was subyet to hym: he wold, by hys myght, by ryght of hys eldre, brynge hyt yn-to the self state, that al þe lond shold be vnder hys lordshyppe, as hyt was wndre hys eldre to-fore hys tyme. Of þys tynge he spak preuely wyth Robert, & wyth 8 Moryce, & besoght har consayll therof; And þay hym answerd, & seiden, that 'lyghtly that myght be done, yf he wold make come more plente of englysh men ynto þe lond.' he bad ham well porwe, that thay sholden yn al manere senden after more of har 12 kynd & frendshype. & for thay shold the bettyre wyll haue ther-to, he profred ham to yeue hys eldest doghtre to on of ham, whych hyre so wold, wyth all hys lond aftyr hys day. bot, fore euery of ham had wyf & I-spoused that tyme, after mych spech, & 16 many dalyaunce ther-of at thys consaylle, thay thoght þat he, to the erle Rychard, (of whom we haue ar thys I-spoke, & to whom he behete the same doghter ther-to-fore at Brystowe,) hys lettres

Fitz-
stephen
and
Maurice,
whom he
consults,
advise him
to bring
over more
English-
men.

He sends a
letter to
Earl
Richard
urging him
to come
over.

shold send on thys maner: "**¶** Dermot Macmorgh, prynce of 20 leynestre, to Rychard, Gylbertes son, erle of strugojl, sendeth grettyng. If þou rekenest the tyme that ys Igo, as well as we that nede haue, oure mone nys ycome to þe no rather than hys tyme. Storkes & swalewes, & oper somer foules, we haue 24 aftyre I-loked: thay comen, & wyth þe cold north-westre wynd þay ben away ywent. Bot thy comynge, that we so mych haue desyred & so longe I-loked after, nether estren wyn[d]e, ne noon other, vs ne hath I-send, as thou vs be-hete. þerfor, that thou ne 28 hast y-dene troght some grete lette, hastylly be about to do; for that wer al oure gladnes, that thou hast swyth. If þou stalwardly comest, & wyth good myght, the four partyes of Irland shal sone be turned to þe fyft." Whan the erle had thys I-hard, he was 32 yn many thoghtes; & aftyr many selcouth * & dyuers redes, at the last he bethoght hym, that so fewe men as weren yn-to the lond I-come ther-to-fore, hadde ynd so lytyll whyll so well I-sped of har aduentures: he name to hym the better herte, & thyng 36

[*Fol. 6b.]

[CHAPTER XII.]

A. D. 1169.

Macmurgħ sawe the Englysh-men so bolde, that no man myght ham wythstoyd. he be-thoght hym of thyng that was passyd, and that some of his eldryn to-fore hym haddyn some tyme the kyngedome of al Irland, and that al the land was subiecte to hym. he wolde, by his myght / by ryght of eldryn, bryng hit Into the same state, that al the londe sholde be vndyr his lordshipe, as hit was * Vndyr His eldryn to-fore His tyme. Of this thyng He Spake wyth Robert *and* wyth Moryce, and be-soghte har consayle vp-on this. And thay hym answerid, *and* sayd, that ‘lyghtly that myght be done, yf he wolde make come more Plente of Englysh-men into the londe.’ He Prayed ham, that in al haste thay sholde sende aftyr more of hare kyn *and* hare frendis. and for thay sholde haue the bettyr will therto, he profered hame to yeue his eldyst doghtyr to one of ham, whych hyr so wolde, with al the londe aftyr his day. but, for euery of hame hadd wyfe, and spoused that tyme, Aftyr mych spech, *and* many delyaunce therof at this consayle, thay thoght that he, to the erle richard (of whom we haue ar this spoke, and to whom he promysyd the same doghtyr there-to-for at Brystowe,) his letteres sholde sende on this manere // “ Dermot Macmurgħ, Prince of leynstere, to Richard, Gylbertes sone, Erle of strugoil, sendyth gretynge. If ye haue rekenyd the tyme that is I-goo, as wel as we that nede haue, oure compleynthe is not come to yow no radyr than this tyme. Storkys and swalewes, and othyr Somyr fowlis, we haue aftyr a-waytid: thay comyn; and with the colde north weste wynde thay ben away I-went. But youre comynge, that we so mych haue desyrid, and so longe lokid aftyr, nethyr estryn wynd, ne none othyr, vs ne hath sende, as ye vs promysid. Ther-for [as] ye ne haue this doñe but throgħ some grete lette, hastely be a-but to do; for that were al oure gladnys, that ye haste blywe. Yf ye boldely come, and wyth good streynth, the foure Parties of Irland shal sone be turned to the fyfte” // Whan the Erle hadd this hard, he was in many thoghtis; and aftyr many and dyuers thoghtes, at the laste he be-thoght hym, that so few men as weryn into the londe y-come ther-to-fore, haddyn in so lytill tyme so wel y-spede of har aduutures: he hade the bettyr herte, and thyng that he dowtted

Capitulum
xij^m.*ad arito et
antiqui
jura.**hoc facile
feri posse.**legitime
copula
gaudebat
uterque.*Ovid, *Ep.*
*Her. ii. 7.**circio jam
flante nec
favonius
nec eurus.**de facili
conver-
tentur*

A. D.
1169-70.
The Earl
resolves
on the
enterprise.

that he douted myche ther-by-fore to begyne, he wax tho the bolder to tak an hond. Fro that tyme, al hys thoght & all hys wylle was, nyghte & day, wyth all hys myzth to wend in-to Irland. He went hym to þe kyng henry, & hym swith be-soght þat he shold delyuer hym hys londes þat sholden be hys by ryght of herytage, other yeue hym leue to do hym yn adventur, lond to purchace yndvoked land.

A. D. 1170.

[CHAPTER XIII.]

He sends
Reymond
le Gros to
Ireland,
who lands
near
Waterford,
ab. May 1,
1170.

When the Kynge wyst hys entent, whoder he wold go, he ne yaue hym fully leue, ne fully hym ne warned; bot wyth such leue as he had, he dight hym þe wynter tyth the begynny[n]ge of Maye. He sent to-for hym ynto Irland A knyght that was I-called Reymond le gras;—wyth hym, x knyghtes, & fourty Squyers, & four score bowmen;—A man ful hardy & stalwarde, & well proued yndwepne, Robertis neuue, & Moryces, har eldest brother, sone. Thay arryued at a place i-called doneuile, four myle a south halfe Waterford; & ther thay ared a dyche, & a feble castel vpon, of yarde and turues¹. The men of Watterford, & wyth ham Malaghelynd of olan, thys warden I-ware that thay y-hadden such neghborhede ful loth, & toke ham to rede, þat þay wolden vpon ham, ar mo com to ham. Thay assembled ham togeddre, well thre thousand men, & wente ouer the wattyre of sur, that parteth the twey contres of leynestre & of mounestre, & setten ham yndwre thre hostes, ful boldely for to assaylle the englysshe-men with-In har castell. Reymond & hys men—thogh they fewe wer, they wer nat feynt—with vneuenly host wente out & assembled wyth ham. Bot, as no wonder was, so few men ne myght nat all priuely fyghten aye so many, thay turned ham aye to har recet. the other wenede that thay departed yn dyscomfyte; thay braken har sheld. In, & wente aftyr: & thay war nat fully wythynd þe yate, that some of ham ne rather In than þe englyssh. Reymond saw that he & hys weren yndwre gret perylle, & vpon poynt to lese the lyfe. he be-cryed hys felewes, & turned stalwarthly vpon her formen²; & þe fyrste that come yndwre, he claue hynd the heed, & throgth slaght of that

He is
attackt
by the
Waterford
men and
O'Phelan,

and is
forced to
retreat to
his camp.

¹ MS. iurues, or inrues.

² men in front.

mych ther-be-for to begyn, he wax than the **boldyr to take an** honde. Fro that tyme, al his thoght and al his will was, nyght and day, wyth al his myght to wende into Irland. He went then to the kyng, and besoght hym that he shold delyuere hym his londis that sholdyn be his by ryght of heritage, othyr yeue hym leue to do hym in aduventure, londe for to Purchase in vnkyd land.

A. D.
1169-70.
*vel in
exteris
regionibus
se fatis et
fortunae
commit-
tendi
licentiam
daret.*

[CHAPTER XIII.]

A. D. 1170.

Whan the kyng vnderstode his entente, whedyr he wolde go, he yaue hym not full leue, ne fully be-name hym not; but with suche leue as he hadd, he dight hym the wyntyr till the begynnyng of may / he Sende to-for hym into Irland a knyght that was callid¹ Reymond Legras;—wyth hym, x knyghtis and fourty Squyeris, and foure score bowmen;—A man ful hardy and bolde and wel proued in wepyn, Robert-is eme², and Morices, hare eldyts brodyr, sone. Thay lonyd at a place that is y-callid Dundonenyld, foure Mile on the Sowth syde of watyrford; and there they rerid a dyche, and a febill castel vpon, of Iardis and turues*. The men of Watyrford, and wyth ham Malaghelyn Of olan, this waryn y-ware that thay haddyn such neighboris, that ham were loth³; and toke ham to consayle, that thay wolde vp-on ham, ar mo come to hame. Thay gaderid ham to-gaddyr, wel iije. M. men, and wentyn ouer the watyr of Sure, that partyth the two contreis, that is to Say leynystre and mounestre, And settyn ham in thre hostis, ful boldely forto assayle the Englysh-men with-In har castel. Reymond and his men (thegh thay fewe were, they were not feynte) with few pepill wentyn out, and mete with hame. But, as no woundyr hit was, so few men myght not al plenary fyghten ayeyn so many, that turned ham to thare recette. the othyr wende that thay depertid in descomfite; thay brakyn har sheldrun, and wentyn aftyr. and thay were not fully wythin the gate, that some of hame nere radyr In than the English. Reymond saw that he and his were in grete Pereil, and on Poynte to lese here lyfe. he cried on his fellowis, and turned boldely vp-on here enemys. and the fryst that come In, he clewe his hede. and throgh deth of that o man, al the

Capitulum
xiiij^m.
*quasi
licentia,
ironica,
namque
magis
quam
vera.*
[² eme,
uncle, is
'nephew'
in this
MS.]
[*Fol.6b.]
*ex virginis
et cespite.*

*de plano
resistere
non potuit.*
*intra
valvas
rix plene
suspensas
certatim
intraudo
suce-
perunt.*

¹ R. Legras.³ Exterorum viciniam suspectam habentes, v. 248.

A. D. 1170. mañ, all the ost was dyscomfyte, & tok hañ to flyght. The
 oper ham folwed yñ-to all þe pleyñ, & leyd hañ oñ so, þat yñ
 lytell whyll thay slowe of hañ fyfe¹ hundred & mo; & þe most
 parte of þe other felleñ adoñ yñ-to þe see, of þe heye rokes, & 4
 dreñt hañ-selfe. In thys fyght, was a knyght that hete Wyllyam
 ferand, that dydde ouer-well & aboue all other: he was a mañ
 that hade semblant as thoght he wer oñ the mich yuell, & þer-for
 [* Leaf 7.] he put hym-selue² alwey the^r * the most perille was; ffor he ne 8
 raght thegh deth come betwene hym & hys yuell, ar hyt wa^r to
 mych I-smýt vpon hym. He^r þe pryð of waterford felle; he^r
 all hys myght went to noght; he^r-of come the Englysshe hope
 & comfort; & to the Iresshe, dred & wanhope; ffor hýt was neuer 12
 the^r-to-for I-herd, that of so fewe men, so grett a slaght was done.
 Bot lyder consaylle thay dydden þe^r-after, that turned ham to
 mych cruelte; ffor whañ the majstry was al har, & al har fomeñ
 ouercome, In þe fyght weren ytake well thre score meñ & teñ, 16
 that ham yolden, & weren the heghest & the rychyst of al the sitè,
 such þat þay myght haue had for ham the sitè delyuered, or els
 as myche catel as thay wolden desy^r. Heruy of Mountmorthy,
 that to hañ was ycome, hym thrydsome of knyghtes, & Reymond, 20
 vp dyuers domes strouen what meñ shold do wyth har prysons³;
 ffor Reymond trauayllet about for to dyluere hañ, as a mañ of
 reuthful mode, & þus seyð to hys feres: "lordynges, what ys vs
 to done of ou^r wreched prisoners? I sey nat that man⁴ shal on 24
 any maner spar hys fomañ; bot thay beth nat now fomen, both⁵
 beth meñ nat rebelle, bot yñ bataylle for to defend⁶ har contrey
 ouercome. Me thynketh thay beth now yñ such state, that me
 oght bettyr haw mercy of hañ & yeve hañ lyfe, for to yeue other⁷ 28
 ensample to be boxom, thañ cruely to do hañ to deth, wha^r-
 throgħ þat other, throgħ ferdnesse of trust, þe lasse to yeld hañ
 to vs." Whañ Reymond had such wordes I-seyde, yn al þe folke
 but Hervey was moste wi[lle]⁷ to graunt ham lyf, Arose vp Heruy amonge 32
 opposes
 him.

¹ MS. lyfe.² MS. sleue.³ pryson = prisoner.⁴ MS. maner.⁵ but: Sed hi non hostes jam, sed homines.—*Op.* v. 250.⁶ MS. defend.⁷ The ink has perisht: 'et murmure populi cum quodam quasi favore subsecuto.' *Gir. Camb., Exp. Hib. c. xv.—Op. v. 252, Rolls Series.*

hoste was dys-comfite *and* toke ham to flyght / The othyr ham A. D. 1170.
 folwid^r into al the Playñ, and leyde on ham. So that in lytyl
 space of tyme thay kyllyd^r of ham v. C. *and* mo; and the most *ab altis in*
 Parte of the othyr fellyn adovñ into the see, of the hey Rokys, *mare rupi-*
 and dreynt ham-selfe // In this fyght was a knyght that was *bus prae-*
 callid^r William ferrand, that did ful wel *and* abowe al othyr; *cipitati*
¹he was a man that hade semblant as thegh he were on the *sunt*
 mych yuel; and therfor he Putte hym-Selfe at tymys ther the *infiniti.*
 moste Peryl was. For he roght not thegh dethe come between
 hym and his Sekenys, or hit were mych grow on hym¹ /
 Here the Pryde of Watyrforde felle; here al his myght went to *superbia*
 noght; her-of come the Englysh hope and conford^r; and to the *cecidit.*
 Irysh^r, dred and wanhope. For hit was neuer ther-to-fore herde *horror . .*
 that, of So few men, so grete a slaghte was done. But a lewid *desperatio.*
 consayle thay diddyn, that ther-aftyr turned ham to myche
 cruelte. For whan the Mastry was al hare, *and* al hare enemys
 ouercome, In the fyght weryn take wel iij^e score men *and* teñ that *septua-*
 ham yeldyn, *and* weryn the beste and the rycheste of the Cite, *ginta cives.*
 Such that thay myght haue hade for them the Cite delyuerid^r, or
 els as mych ryches as thay wolde desyre. Heruey of montmurthy, *pecuniam*
 that to ham was come, hym thyrdsome of knyghtis, *and* Reymond^r, *infinitam.*
 vp-on dyuers consaylis thoghten what thay sholde do wyth har
 Prysoneris. For Reymond laborid^r for thar delyverance, as man
 of pitefull herte / And thus sayd to his fellowis: " Lordynges, what
 is vs to done wyth oure wrechid^r presoners? I Sey not that man *de captivis*
 shal on any maner spare his enemys; but thay byth nat now *nostris.*
 enemys; but byth men not rebell, but in bataill forto defende
 har contrey ouercome. Me-thynkyth thay byth now in such state,
 that we owyth bettyr haue mercy of ham *and* yeue ham lyfe, forto *potius . .*
 yeue othyr ensampill to be boxume, than cruely to do ham to *pietas ad*
 deth; wher-for otheris wil truste the lasse to yelde ham to vs." *exemplum,*
 *Whan Reymond^r Hade Suche Wordys y-Seyde, and al the fello- *quam cru-*
 shippe Was most about to graunt ham lyfe, Aros vp heruey ney *delitas ad*
tormentum.
[*Fol.7a.]

¹⁻¹ vir carne quidem infirmus, sed corde firmissimus: imminentem, ut videbatur, leprae malitiam morte nimirum praevenire desiderans tam praematura quam praeclara.—*Op.* v. 249.

A. D. 1170. hame al, & thys ham̄ seyð: "Inogh̄ Reymond openly to vs hath
 'Enough of spoke of mercy & almes-dedes, vnked landes I-wonne, & nat wyth
 Mercy! Did slagh̄ & wyth brenny[n]ge. Wheder̄ Alexander̄ & Iulius Cesar,
 Alexander that wereñ lordes of al þe world, wonnen londes by such wey, 4
 and Caesar win by it? I wold Reymond wold me answer. Whan thay comeñ to vs vel
 arrayede to fyghteñ, If þay hadde I-won ouer-hand & vs ouercome,
 wolden thay, for almesse & for reuth, haw had *mercy* of vs? nay,
 I trow nat. þerfor out-chese oñ of two: Otheṛ do manly thyng, 8
 wheṛfore we bene ycome; & the folke þat ys rebbeñ ayeyn vs,
 Either kill wyth-outten any noyse, wyth wepne hertely brynge out of dawes;
 the rebels quietly, Other, yf we sholleñ do almes dede on heñ, & ham̄ spareñ, as
 or go Reymond hath seyð, out we wend to ouṛ shyppes, & turne ayeyñ, 12
 home! & let we the wreched men hold har lond, & brouken wythouten
 any chalange." Heruyes dome lyket *better* than Reymondes; &
 As no weren the Cytezeyns to deth Idemed. Thay ne hadden no wone
 gallows are handy, the rebels are drown. of warytres; & þerfor þey ladden ham̄ to þe clyf of þe see, & put 16
 ham̄ adoun, & drent ham.

[CHAPTER XIV.]

Earl Richard Struguil [*Fol.7b.] The men-tyme, the Erl Rycharð, wyth the power̄ that he
 had arayed, was y-come to south wales; & whañ he hadde
 wyth * gret reuerence y-done hys pylrimage at sent dauyes, he put 20
 hym to saylle, & hade good wynd, came ynto Irland *with* two
 lands at hundred knyghtes & otheṛ, moṛ than a thousand. He arryued at
 Waterford, Aug. 23, weyseford on seynt Bertylmewes eueñ: Than was fulfýlled a
 fulfilling prophecye that Merlyñ seyð of hys comynge; 'þe brond shal 24
 of Merlin come to-fore þe borned fyr; And rygh as the spark maked the
 and the brond come, Also þe brond shal make the fyr come *after*.' Anoper
 Irish Saint Moling. prophecye, seynt Molyng seyð of that same: 'A mych man shall
 erne to-fore; & þe most heeddes of desmond & ek of leynstre 28
 he shal defouly; & wyth streynth he shall noblych the wey
 opne to the wepned.' Amorow, whan the tȳthyng of ham̄ was
 Reimund joins him. I-spronge, Reymond went hym to the Erle *with* furtȳ knyghtes
 They assault Waterford, Tuesday, Aug. 25. *with* mych gladnes; & amorow, *after* þe holy-daye, Thay went 32
 comynly al to þe syte of Waterford, & assaylled the toun ful fersly;
 & twyes thay wereñ rebuked, & ful stalwarhly, of þe Cytezeyns.
 Reymond, that by *purueance* & *graunt* of ham al was ymade

amonge ham al, *and* thus ham Sayde: "I-nowe Reymond opynly to vs hath Spoke of mercy and almes-deddes, vn-kyd landis to wynne *and* nat wyth Slaughter *and* wyth brennyng. whedyr Alexandyr *and* Iulyus Cesar, that weryn lordys of al the worlde, wommen londis by such wey, I wold Reymond wolde me answere. whan thay commyn to vs wel arrayed to fyghten, If thay had the bettyr, *and* vs had ouercome, woldyn thay, for almesse and for Pite, haue had mercy of vs? Nay, y trow not. ther-for chese oñe of two: Othyr to do manly thyng, wher-for we ben come; and the Pepill that is rebel ayeynes vs, wythouten eny noyse, wyth wepyn hertely bewys ham of lyfe / Othyr, yf we shall do almysdede on them, and ham spare, as Reymond hath Sayd, go we to oure shippis, *and* turnne ayeyne, *and* lete we the wrechyd pepill holde har lond; *and* kepyn without any chalange." Herueyes Iugement Plesid bettyr than Reymondes; *and* weryn the Citteseynes to deth demyd. Thay had no galosis; and therfor thay laddyn ham to the clyfe of the See, and put ham adouñ, *and* drovnde ham al.

A. D. 1170.
Cum ad nos expugnandos instructis aciebus advenerunt.

membris contractis, in maris praecipitium dati sunt.

[CHAPTER XIV.]

The men-tyme, the Erle Rychard, wyth the Power that he had arraied, was come to Suth Walis; *and* When he had with grete reuerence done his Pylgrymage at Seynt Dauyes, he Put hym to sayle, *and* had good wynd, come into Irland wy[th] two hundryd knyghtis *and* othyr, more than a thousand. he londid at Weysford on Seynt Bartolomewes evyn. Then was fulfillid a pprophecy that Merlyng Sayde of his comyng: "The brond shal come to-for the brennyng fyre, And ryght as the Sparke makid the brond come, Also the brond shall make the fyre come aftyr." Anothyr prophesy, Molyng Sayd of that same: "A mych man shal erne to-for; *and* the moste hedis of desmond and also of leynystre he shal defeuly; and wyth streynth he shal nobelych the wey opyn to the wepenyd." A-morrow, whan the thythyngis spronge, Reymond went to the Erle with fourty knyghtis with mych gladnys; and amorrow, aftyr the holy day thay went holy to the Cite of Watyrford, and assaylid the town ful fresly; *and* twyes they weryn rebukyð, *and* ful boldely, of the Citteseynes. Reymond, that by Purueyaunce and graunt of ham

Capitulum xiiij^m.

prophetia Merlini.

prophetia Molyng.

capita conculeans.

bis viriliter repulsi fuissent.

A. D. 1170. prince, & formañ of al the host, sawe & awayted a place good for to assaylle: he cryed & cleped the wepned men to the assaut, & þay egrely assaylleden, & braken yn-to þe sytè, & folke-mele
 They take Waterford. slowe the meñ yñ weyes & yñ houses, & wañ þe Cytè. In 4
 rathnyldes touř wereñ twey rýche meñ ytake, bot þrogh prayer of Macmorgħ, that thedeř was thañ I-come, he was y-hold alyue.
 Macmorgħ brogħt hys doghtyř with hym, Eue by name, & spoused hyř to the Erle, & madeñ fast sekernesse betweñ ham. Wañ thys 8
 Macmurgħ's daughter Eve is married to Earl Struguil. was ydo al, þe Erle left meñ for to kepe the cytè, & turned hym with the hoste to deulyñ.

[CHAPTER XV.]

Macmorgħ wýst that myche of the poweř of hař lond
 M was I-come to helpen hañ of dyuelyñ, & hadden beset 12
 all þe wodde weyes & þe narow weys thetherward: he left tho weyes, & lad the hoste throught the montaynes of Glyndelagħ, al harmeles, rýght to the sytè. These cytezeyns, ouer al otheř, hated wereñ of hym, & that was no wonder; ffor yn some tyme thay 16
 slowen hys fadyř yñ the cytè; & after the harme, thay dydde hyñ mych sham, for thay burryd an hounde with hym yn the pute that he was yn I-leyde. Thay sent messagers to þe Erle, & namely the Erchebyssshop laurence, & besoghteñ pees; & as thay 20
 wereñ spekyng of pees, on oon half was Reymond, & on the otheř halue a ful hardy knyght, Myles of Cogan, with jonglynges well coueytouse of battaylle & of gettingyng. Thay assaylled the Cytè, & breken In, & wan þe Cytè, wyth gret slaght of þe sytzeyns. 24
 [* Fol. 8 a.] * Natheles, the best parte of ham, wyth þe rychest & the derwarthest thyngys þat thay hadden, yn botes escapeden, & wenten yn-to þe north ylondes, wyth hastoyl, that was maýstre yn the cyte, & har lodesmañ. That day byfel two Muracles yn the cyte: that 28
 Hasculf and the richest folk escape. on of the Croice, yn the moder chýrche of þe trýnyte, whyche the Cytzeyns woldeñ haue I-ladde with ham yn-to the ylandes yn the see; & for nothyng, thay ne myghth yt weccheñ out of þe place. That otheř, of a sergeant that hadde I-robbet the erche- 32
 byssshoppes paleys, & þer-after come to-for þe rode, & offred a peny: fyrst, & este-sone, & at euery tym, the peny stert ayejne to hym. he bethoght hym that god was nat wel I-quenytred of the robbery

al was made Prynce and forman of al the hoste, Saw and a-waytyd^{A. D. 1170.} a place goode forto assayle. he cried *and* callid the wepenyd men to the assaute and^r thay egyrly assaylid^r, and brakyn Into the Cite, and kyllid the men in weyes and in houses, and wan the Cite. in rathnyldys toure weryn two ryche men take, *and* thay both were be-hedyd^r. Macsaghlyn of olan was also take, but throgth Prayer Melaghlin O'Phelan is taken, but kept alive. Macmurgh broght his doghtyr wyth hym, Eue by name, and Spousid^r hyr to the Erle and madyn fast syckyrmys betwene *Ham// Whan this was done al / the Erle Lefte men forto Kepe the Cite *and* turnyde hym *with* the hoste to deuelyn //

[CHAPTER XV.]

Macmurgh vndyrstode that myche of the pepill of the contrey was come to helpe ham of the Cite of deuelyn, *and* hadde be-sette al the wodd-weyes and the Narrow-weyes thedyrward^r. He lefte thay weyes, and lad the hoste throw the montanys of Glyndelagh, al holde and sound, tyl thay come to the Cite. The Citeseynes ouer al othyr hatid Macmurgh; *and* they wer hatyd of hym: and that was no wondyr. For in some tyme thay slowyn his fadyr in the Cite; and aftyr the harme, thay dyd hym moche shame, for thay buryed an hounde *with* hym in the buryles that he was In-leyde. They send messangeris to the Erle, *and* namely the archebyschope Laurance, and besoghten Pees; and as thay weryn Spekyn of pees, on oone halue was Reymond and on the othyr syde a ful hardy knyght, Miles de Cogan, *with* yonglynges wel couetos of batail and of getyng: They assaylid the Cite, and brokyn In, *and* toke the Cite *with* grete slaghte of the Citesenes. Natheles, the beste parte of ham, *with* the rychest and the wourdyest thynges that thay haddyn, in botis escapedyn, and wentyn into the north ylondes wyth hastoyl, that was Captayn in the Cite, and har governoure / That day befel two Miraclis in the Cite: that one, of the cros in the Cee church of the trynyte, wych the Citeseynes wold haue take wyth ham into the Ilandys in the see / And for no thyng thay myght not take hit out of the place. That othyr, of a Sergeant that had yrobyd^r the archebysshope-is Place; and ther-aftyr come to-for the rode, *and* offerid a peny: fryst, and aftyr, and in euery tyme, the peny styрте ayeyñ to hyñ. he bethoght hym that god was not aplesid of the robbery that he had

Capitulum xv^m.

vias nemorosas et arctas

cum cane cives tumulauerunt.

nares et scaphas . . intrantes

sicut in Topographia declaratur. Op. v. 129.

A. D. 1170. that he had y-do: he turned hym than, & let take al that he had y-nom¹, & ba^r hyt ayeyn, & went to þe rode & offred; & hy[s] offrynge the[r] abode. Whan þe Erl hade a few dayes I-ordyned for the stat of þe Cytè, he left the^r Myles de Cogan, 4 keper of þe Cytè & of þe contre, & a partye of þe meyne wyth hym. And by entycement of *Macmorgh*, that bethoght hym of þe old enmyte that he hade to the kyng of Mithe, he went hym to þe contrey, branten, slown, & robeden, & broghten the contre 8 to noght, for none ne durst hym wythe-stand. Oconghu^r of Conaght saw that he was the next—as man that seethe hys neighbors hous berne, he may drede of þe sparkes—he sent Messagers to *Macmorgh* yn thys wordes: “Ayeine þe fou^rme 12 of ou^r pees, thou hast imad come yn-to thys lond mych out-comeⁿ folke. þe whylle that thou held the yn thy leynystre, we hyt tholleth eunly; Now thou, as man that naght ne the thynekst on thyn oth, ne no reuth ne hast of thyn ostage, the 16 merres I-sete of thyn eldren lond, vnryghtfullyo uergoste. Make thyn out-comen men wyth-draw, & turne ajeyne, or els sothly we shul the send thy sones heede.” *Macmorgh* thys herd, & yaf hym a prout answa^r, & sent hym to sey, that he ha^m wold hold, 20 & send after more & eke more; that he nold neuer reste tyl he hadde I-wonne Connaght, wyth the kyng-dome of al þe lond, as hys eldreⁿ sumtym hyt hadden to-fo^r hym. Oconnoghu^r had he^r of grete dyspyte, & sore was atened, & let smyth of sonnes 24 and cuts off his son's head. heed, þat he had hym Itake fore ostage.

[CHAPTER XVI.]

A Council of the Irish clerics is held at Armagh. The country's ill has come from enslaving English children. [*Fol.8b.]

Aftyr this, worth gret spech yn-to all þe lond, & mych ferdnesse of the out-comeⁿ meⁿ. Than gaddered ham al to-gedderes, al the clerkes & the wysmeⁿ of þe lond at 28 ardmagh; & of thys folkes comyn^g, was mych I-spoke, & longe dalyaunce. At þe laste, comynly thay accordedeⁿ al he^r-to, that, for the syⁿ of þe folk, thys mesaduentu^r ham ys byfal; namely, that whan thay fondeⁿ englysshe-meⁿ chyldren to sylleⁿ, that 32 chepmen & robbers woldene brynge to the lond, thay * were wonet to by ham, & do ham yn thraldome; & that throggh goddys owne

¹ MS. ymon.

done. he turned hym than, *and* toke al that he toke wyth hym, A. D. 1170. and bare hit ayeñ, *and* went to the rode, and offerid; *and* his offerynge ther abode. / When the Erle had a few dayes y-ordaynyd for the state of the Cite, he lefte there myles de Cogan, kepere of the Cite and of the contrey, and a partey of the meynne wyth hym. And by entycement¹ of *Macmurgh*, that be-thoght hyñ of ¹ *instinctu*. the olde enemyte that he had to the kyng of Myth, he went hym *As Mac-* to the contrey, brantyn, Slouedyñ and robedyñ, *and* broghten the *murgh* contrey to noight, for non ne durst hym wythstond. Oconghoure *hated* of connaght Saw that he was the nexte, (as a man that seth his *O'Rourke* evynerystyñ his house brenne, he may dred the sparkys;) he send *of Meath* messangeres to *Macmurgh* in these wordis: "Ayeyne the forume of *(p. 2-4),* oure pees, thow haste made come into this londe mych strange *Meath is* pepill. the whyle that thow helde the in thy leynystre we hit *wasted.* tollid² euyñly. Now thow,—as man that noight rekyth of his *in ineulam* trouth, ne no pite hauest of thyn hostage,—the meris y-sette² of *advocasti..* thyn eldryñ lond, vuryghtfully ouer-goste³. Make thy strangeres * *aequa-* Wyth-draw, and turne ayeyne; othyr ellys Sothly we shall the *nimiter* sende thy Sonnys hede." *sustinui-* *mus.* *metas* *positas ..* *insolenter* *excessioli* *[* Fol.8a.]* *Macmurgh* this herde, and to hym yaue a prowte answer, *and* Sende hym to Say, that 'he ham wold holde, and send aftyr more, and eke more, / ande that he wold neuer reste, til he had take *and* conquerid al connaght, *with* al the kyngdome of al the lond, as his predessessouris had to-for hym.' Oconghoure here-of had grete indignacioñ, and gretly ther-of was *indignans* grewid; And he comandid to Smyte of his Sones hede, that he ynfe *Rothericus* hym for an hostage.

[CHAPTER XVI.]

Aftyr this, Spronge grete Spech in-to al the lond, *and* *Capitulum* mych dreded^{xvjm.} the strange comen men. Than gadderid ham to-gederes al the clerkys and the wysmen of the land^d at Ardmagh; and of this pepil-is comynge, was mych Speche and longe delyaunce. At the last, comynly thay acordid^d al herto, that, for the synne of the Pepill, this mys-aventure ham ys *tam a* by-fall, specialy that whan thay foundyn Englysh-men childryn *mercatori-* to sill, that Marchandis and roberes wold bryng to the lond, *bus, quam* they were woued to by ham, and pute ham in thraldome; And *praedoni-* *bus atque* *piratis*

A. D. 1170. wreth hyt was, that as syllers wered̄ to-fore y-brought yn thraldome, also the byggers sholden after: ffor̄ hyt was somtynd̄ that the folke of englond—The maner of har kyngdome was al I-hole—whan thay had noñd̄ other̄ thynḡe that pay myghten take to, rathar̄ 4
 rather than than thay wold any myssayse tholy, Thay wer̄ I-wont to sylleñd̄
 suffer, hañ chyldeñ & hañ other̄ kynnesmeñ, botl̄d̄ ynto Irlond & ynto
 would sell their children. other̄ londes. Ther̄-foñd̄ hyt may well be soth, that as the byggers,
 also þe syllers, oft *serued* wel, throuḡh so loly gyltes to be y-brought yn 8
 thraldome. Ther̄ hyt was yn þat consaylle be-heght, & by assent of al comynly I-set, that al the englysshe-meñ yn þe lond that yn thraldome wered̄, shold beñd̄ delyuered, & frely let goo whodyr̄so they wold.

[CHAPTER XVII.]

Reports are spread in England of Fitz-Gerald's keeping Irish land. Henry II forbids ships to go to and from Ireland; and orders all Englishmen home.
 Fitz-Gerald sends to Henry II in Gascony, and yields his Irish conquests to him.

Her-aftyr spronge tythyngges of the Erle & of þe 12
 englysshe-meñ ynto englond; &, as maner ys, myche me made more; & that the Erl hade apropred to hym, nat only leynestre, bot other̄ londes also, that, by no ryght ne by law, to hyñd̄ ne to hys wyf longed̄. The kynḡe sent anoon, & forebeed that, 'out 16
 no lond that were yn hys power̄, ne shold no shyppen passe yn-to Irland, ne no maner thynḡe for to brynḡe; & al meñ that yn-to Irland war̄ comen, shold ayeyn come yn-to englande, wyth-yn þe next estre, or̄ they sholden be dysherytēd̄ & ex[y]led out of lond 20
 for euer.' The Erl saw that he & hys wered̄ narow belad, both of hys men that hym wold leue, & eke that nothynḡe ne most hym come out of other̄ landes, of þynḡe that hym nede was: by comune rede of hys men, he sent Reymond ouer to the kynḡe 24
 that was fer̄ yn gascoyne, & thus hym sent to say: "By thy leue, lord, yf y am welle vndyrstond, y went ynto Irland for to help thy trew man, Dermot Macmorgh; þerfor, that al that of hys herytage, other̄ of opers yn þe lond, almyghty god me hath I-sent, 28
 as hyt come of thy graunt & of thy good wyll, also, I wyll that hyt to the turne, to do ther̄-wyth what the lyketh."

[CHAPTER XVIII.]

Thomas a Beket is martyrd.

Reymond went to the kynḡe with such mandement; & the whyle that he folwed the kynḡes court, abydynḡe hys 32
 answer̄, Thomas, the archebysshopp̄e of Cantrebery¹, was martyred

¹ (*In margin, in a later hand*: The archebushop of canterbury called Tho. Beckett. 1171.)

that, throw godis his owyn wreth hit was, that as the sylleris A. D. 1170.
 weryn to-for broght in thraldome, also the byeris sholdyn be
 brogh[t] in thraldome aftyr / For hit was somtyme that the
 pepil of England the maner of har kyngdome was al y-holde:
 Whan thay had none othyr thyng that thay myght take to,
 Radyr than thay wolde suffyr any dysseise, thay wold syll har
 childyr and har othyr kynnes-men, both into Irland *and* into
 othyr landis. Therfor hit may wel be trouth that, as the byeris,
 also the Silleris, ofte Seruyd well, throug So wicked doynge, to be
 broght in thraldome. There hit was in that consayll promysyd,
priusquam inopiam ullam aut in ediam sustinerent.
and by assent of al comynly y-Set, that al the Englysh-men
 in the lond that in thraldome weryn, shold ben delyuerid, and
 frely lette goo whedyr So thay wolde.

[CHAPTER XVII.]

Here-aftyr spronge tythyngis of the Erle and of the Capitulum xvij^m.
 Englysh-men into Englonde; *and* as the maner is, of mych
 thay mad more; and that the Erle had appropierid to hym, not only
 leynystere, but othyr londis also, that, by no ryght ne lawe, to hym
 ne to his wyfe partenyd // The kyng sende anone, and comandid
 that 'no shippe, out of no lond that Partenyth to hym, sholde Passe
 into Irland; Ne no maner thyng forto brynge; and al men that
 Into Irland war comyn, sholde ayeyn goo into England wythin the
 nexte Estyr, Othyr they sholde be disherytid *and* exilid out of
 lond for euer.' The Erle saw that he and his weryn narrow bylad,
 both of his men that hym wold leue, and also that nothyng shold
 come out of othyr landis of thyng that he had ned to / he toke
 consayle of his men, and Sente Reymond ouer to the kyng, that was
 fere in gascoyn, and thus hym Sende to say: "By youre lycence
 lord, yf y be wel vnderstond, y wente into Irland forto helpe yowr
 trew man, Dermot Macmurgh. Therfor, that al that of his
 heritage, othyr of otheres, that y haue in the Land, that almyghty
 god to me * Hath sende, as hit come of youre graunt *and* of youre
 good wyle,¹ also y wille that Hit be turne to yow, to do ther-wyth
 whate Plese yow."
in areto jam positos.
si bene recordor, [*Fol. 8 b.] sic ad eandem pro libito vestro nutuque redibit.

[CHAPTER XVIII.]

Reymond went to the kyng with such mandement; *and* Capitulum xviii^m.
 the whyle that he folwid the kynges courte, abydyng his
 answer, Thomas, the archebisshope of Cantreberry, was martirid

A. D. 1170. yn englond, nat wyth-out mych blame to al þe lond-folk, both
 lered & lewed. That erchebysshopp, *after* many-fold martyrdom
 Arch- that he polled, negh seuen yeȝ that he was bashed out of englond
 bishop Beket that he polled, negh seuen yeȝ that he was bashed out of englond
 suffred for the ryghtes of holy chyurche, In sore & many wepynges, yn 4
 seven years double heer̄ about hys body—pat oñ, yn styd of shyrth; that oper,
 in exile, yn stydde of breche—nyght & day yn holy prayer̄ & redynge
 personally, yn holy wrytte; & o thyng that meste sorow broght to hys
 and also hert, that al hys kyñ, men & wommen, yonge & old, wommen 8
 thro' his persecuted kinsfolk, lyggyne yn chyld-bed, & old men that fore eld yroked weren yn
 heȝ cradelys, & all otheȝ, clerkes & lewed, that me myght wytt
 that sybrede or otheȝ frendshypp hadden to hym, al thay wereñ
 I-dryue out of englond; & al they that wereñ of eld that pay 12
 myghty othes swerȝ, swaren vpon the masse-boke that, as sone
 as thay come ouer the see, thay shold go to þe erchebyssshoppe,
 [*Fol. 9 a.] & shew hym the * wrechednesse that þay suffred for hys sake;
 who ffor he shold, for reuth of ham, turnen hys hert, & graunt þe 16
 suffered for him. kynges wylle of þynge that he desyred. *After* such martyrdomes,
 and many otheȝ þat he tholled yn hys lyue, whyche no manly
 Then came hert may bethynke to ful end, the hey martyrdom, that broght
 his chief hys soule to þe blysse of heuyn, & hys body to wyrshypp yn hert; 20
 Martyr- dom. otheȝ many þynge be-tydden that men Aght well vnderstond;
 þat ayeyns hys fomen yede, opyn heed, & opened þe chyurch durȝ
 whyche the monkes hadden I-loke, & seyð þat 'meñ ne shold
 no castell make of holy chyurche'; & hys holy croune bade ayeyn 24
 the naked swerdes for to smyte, & that yn the modyr chyurche,
 heghest of al þe lond, & to-foȝ the weued, that he of fouȝ knyghtes,
 wodeȝ than wood houndes, tholled fouȝ woundes yn the holy croun,
 & [n]on without,—so as þe croun oght betokne of proteccion to 28
 clergy,—that he deth tholled yn the north syde of þe chyurche,
 whyche betokneth Ihesu crystes passyōñ. & thus goddys owne
 knyghte, wythouten any ferdnesse, tholled deth; yn hys lyf of thys
 world, chaunged wel selyly for þe lyf that euer shal lest without 32
 end. And as seynt Tomas-ys day, Apostle, ys þe fyft day afor
 yold, so ys thys Thomas day þe fyft day after. That Thomas
 was candel I-set yn þe este of þe world; Thys Thomas yn þe west.
 [That] was lyght to aly chyurche yn hyȝ yough, as [Thys] yn hyȝ eld; 36

He was
 slain in
 Canter-
 bury
 Cathedral
 by four
 knights,
 before the
 Altar.

The
 Apostle
 Thomas
 died on
 Dec. 21;
 Beket on
 Dec. 29.

in England, not wyth-out grete reprefe to al the land-pepill, both A.D. 1170.
 lerid and lewid. That archebiffope, aftyr manyfolde martyrdome
 that he Sufferid, / ney vij^e. yere that he was banneschid' out of septennalis
 Englund for the ryght of holy church, In sore and many wepyngis, fere exilii.
 In doubill here about his body,—that on in styd of shyrt, that tam femo-
 othyr in styd of breche,—Nyght and day, in holy prayeris and rali quam
 redyngē in holy writte. And o thyng that meste Sorrow wrought corporali.
 to his hert, that al his kynnes-men, yonge and old, women lyggynge nec aetati
 in chyldbed, and olde men that for elde yrokyd weryn in her parcente,
 cradelis, and al othyr, clerkys othyr lewid, that thay mygh[t] know, nec seculi
 that weryn of his kynd, Othyr frendshipe haddyn to hym, al thay tam misera-
 weryn dryw out of Englund. And al thay that weryn of elde, bili san-
 that thay myght othys swere, Swaryn on the masboke, that 'as Sone guinis
 as thay come ouer the See, thay shold go to the archebyschope, and universi
 Shew hym the mesury that thay Sufferid for his Sake;' For he proscrip-
 shold, for Pite of ham, turnen his hert, and graunt the Kyngē his tionē.
 wyll of that, that he desyrid. Aftyr Such martirdomes, and many
 othyr that he sufferid in his lyfe,—the whych in no mannes hert
 may be thoght to ful end,—The hey martirdome, that broght his
 Soule to the blysse of hewyñ, and his body to vyrchip in Erth,
 Othyr many thyngis be-fel that men aght wel vndyrstond; that quod ipse
 ayenes His enemys yede, opyn hede, and oppenyd the church-durre, furibundis
 whych the Monkes haddyn y-loke, and sayd that 'men shold not no hostibus
 castel make of holy church.' And his holy crowne bare ayeyn the templi
 nakyd Swerdes forto smyte, and that in the modyr chyrch, beghist fores
 of al the lond, and to-for the auter / that he of foure knyghtes, aperuit, et
 wodyr than wode houndis, tholled Foure woundes in the holy crown, aperto
 and [n]on wyth-out,—So as the crownd ought to be know tokyn of vertice
 protexcion to clergy,—that he deth Sufferid in the north syde of the gladiis
 church, whych be-tokenyñth Ihesu crystes Passion. and thus god- occurrens.
 is owyn knyght, wyth-out eny ferd, sufferyd' deth; and his lyfe of
 this world, chaunged' for the lyfe that euer shal leste wythout end.
 And as seynte thomas-is day the apostyl, is the V. day afor yolde, 1 ille
 So is this Thomas-is day, the V. day aftyr. That thomas was candil nascenti
 y-sette in the Este of the World; This thomas in the weste. ecclesie
 was lyght to holy churche in hyr youth, as [This] in hyr elde; and lumen
delit, hic
senescenti.

A.D.
1170-1.
As the
Apostle
gave his
blood for
the early
Church, so
Beket gave
his for the
aged one.

Among all
saints, for

[¹ that
tofore]

Beket
alone were
all kinds of
miracles
performd.
He got a
man fresh
eyes and
genitals.
Merlin's
prophecy
of Beket.

[*Fol.9b.]

Beket died
at 48 [that
is, 53-4],
on Dec. 29,
1170.
[T. MSS.
L. T. Ha.
Cl. n. Op.
v. 262 n.
4.]
Macmurgh
dies in
May, 1171.

& as he [the Apostle] commenced holy chyrche with hys blode whan che was arerynge, Also thys, [Beket,] whan she had longe I-stand & wox yn eld, & redy was to falle, wyth hys blode he ryght hyr vp, & sette hyr yn ryght stydde. And as he t[oke hym] selue to 4
quellers ffor to areñ þe seknes of holy chyrche, also thys ne douten nat to taken hym-self to kene swerdes, & lydder men hondes, foñ þe fredome of holy chyrche to sawe vnwemmed. The fourme of hys martyrdome, twey verses a latyn shortly comprehendeth, that 8
thus mych ben to vnderstond: "ffoñ crystes spouse, vnder crystes tyme, yn crystes chyrche, crystes owne leman deyed." Amonge al the halweñ that almyghty god wrought yn erth, of selcouth myraclys for to showeñ hañ holynesse,—as the blynd to see, the 12
lame to goñ, þe dombe to speke, the deue to hyr, lasers to clense, paralyt to festnen, y-dropesie & al other manere yueles to heledñ, the dede to areren, yuel gostes to quetheñ, & al þe fouñ elementes to hañ commaundement haddeñ,—he aloñ was y-wyrshypped with 16
al these, & more þer-to, thañ-to-foñ¹ was nat herd ne sey; ffoñ a mañ that hade hys eghen I-draw out of hys heed, & hys manly membres y-kytte of & y-cast away, come to hys tombe; & þrogh besechyng of hym, god hym sent newe. Of thys holy martyñ, 20
Merlyn seyð thus yn hys prophecy: "A newe martyñ shal aryse with newe myracles, that yn the worldes endyng, yn the west of þe world, by specyal vertue, mannys lymmes out I-draw & out I-corue, ayeyn shald make come. Sorow shal turne ynto yoye, 24
whañ þe sonnes shal sle þe fadyñ yn hys modyñ wombe; prynces & hey men * shal come out of þe este yn-to the weste, & lout ham to þe newe martyres fot-stappes." Al þys was openly I-seyd of þe holy martyñ seynt Thomas; he was þe whet corne þat fel yn 28
erth, & mych fruyt forth broght. In þe yeñ of burth-tyme .xlviij.; of hys sacryfyng .viiij.; of hys exil .vij.; yn the end of Decembre, yn þe yere of ouñ lordes yncarnacion .m.c.lxxj.; & was poppe of Rome, Alexandre the thyrd; Emperouñ of Almayne, ffrytheryke; 32
kyng of ffrance, lowys. Whan the wentyr was I-passed, Dermot Macmorgh deyed, þe begynenyng of may, & was bured at ffernes. A man grett of body; hardy yn fyght amonge hys folke; of lange & lome cryyng yn fyght, hys voys was somdel hors; leuer hym 36

as he *commencid* holy church wyth his blod whan she was arerynge,
 Also this, whan she had long stond, and wox in elde, and redy was
 to fall, wyth his blode he put hyr in good state, and therin
 confermyd hyr. And as he toke hym-selfe to them that hym
 berewid the lyfe, forto arere the sekenys of holy church, Also this
 doutyd not to take hym-Selfe to s[h]arpe Swerdes, & wickyd men
 hondes, * For the fredome of Holy church to Saue Vn-Wemmede.
 The fourme of His Holy martirdome, two Versis of Lateyã Sortely
 comprehendyth, that thus mych ben to vndyrstond: " For crystis
 Spouse, vndyr crystis tyme, in crystis church, crystes owyn leman
 died." / Amonge al the holy Seyntes that almyghty god wrought for
 in erth of voundyrfull miracles, for to Show har holynes,—as the
 bynd to se, the lame to goffe, the dombe to Speke, the deue to
 hyre, leperes to clense, Paralyse to festnen, ydropesye and al othyr
 maner sekenes to hele, the dede to arrere, the vickid Spyrytys to
 ouercome, And al the iiij^e. *elementes* to har comaundement haddyn
 —he alon was y-wyrchippid *with* al thes. For a man, that his
 eghen was hym berewid, *and* his manly membris y-kute of and
 cast away, come to his tombe; and throw besechyng of hym, god
 hym sende newe // Of this holy martyr, Merlyng^e sayd thus in his
 prophesy: "A new martyr shall ryse, *with* new Miracles, that in
 the worldis endyng^e, in the weste of the world, by Special vertu,
manes lymes out y-draw and out y-corue, a-yeyn shal make come.
 Sorrow shal make come Into Ioy, whan the *Sonnes* shal sle the
 Fadyr in his modyr wombe. Princes and hey men shal come out
 of the Este into the weste, *and* lout hame to the new martyr-is fote-
 stappis." Al this was opynly Sayd of the holy martyr Seynte
 thomas. He was the whet-corne that fel in Erth, *and* mych frute
 forth broght. In the yere of his berth-tyme, xlviij.; of his Sacry-
 fyng^e, viij.; of his exil, vij^e.; in the Ende of Decembre, in the yere
 of oure lord-is Incarnacion, Mt. Clxxj; and was Pope of Rome,
 Alexandre the ij^e.; Emperoure of almane, Fryderik; Kyng^e of
 Fraunce, Lowys // Whan the wyntyr was ypassyd, Dermot Mac-
 murgh dyed in the begynnyng^e of May, *and* was buried at Fernys.
 A man grete of body; hardy in fyght amonge his Pepill; of lange
 ofte cryng^e in fyght, his voyce was Somdel hors; Leuer hym was

A. D.
1170-1.[*Fol. 9 a.]
*ut eiusdem
formam
conservaret
illaesam.**verus
amator
obit.**quod sepa-
ratis
membris et
proiectis,
inaudito
more re-
posuit.**Nota de
Sancto
Thoma.**cum matris
in utero
patrem
filii tru-
cidabunt.**Descripcio
Murcardi.
(Op. v.
237-8.)*

A.D. 1171. was that man hym dredet than loued; þe noble & þe ryche he
 Mac- wold brynge to noght; the mek¹ & the pouer he wold rere; al men
 murgh's character. ayeyns hym, & he ayeyns al.

[CHAPTER XIX.]

Hasculf, **A**ftyр that, about whyt-sontyde, hastoyl, that was some 4
 tyme maystre of deuylyn,—as man that fayn was about for
 with to awreke hys old tene,—come wyt men of northwey & of þe north
 Norsemen in forty ylonde, *with* ful grett folk, yn furty grett shyppes, & arryued
 ships, led yn þe hauen of amlyffy, *with* hař lodes-mađ, that hete Iohn the 8
 the Mad, Wood. Thay wenten out of hař shyppes, men well I-wepned,
 lands *sum with* longe swerdes, some *with* Iren pletes & round sheldes
 well I-bound about *with* Iren, swerdes & speres & axys ynowe,
 & marches & comenđ well ordeynly foř to assaylle the toun on the eest half. 12
 to attack Miles de Cogan, kepeř of þe Cyte, kyndly stalwardly, & hardy,
 Dublin. wyth wel chosend folke, went out ayeyns ham, and yaf ham fyght;
 Miles of Cogan and the English bot strong hyt was, to hold fyght ayayn so many *with* so fewe:
 meet him, thađ had he I-lost some of hys menđ; & O knyghtes theygh was 16
 I-cut *with* þe kappe of hys haubergeođ wytht a dynt of a dennysř
 ax. nede he most turne yđ ayeyne at þe yate, tyll that Rychard
 de Cogan, Myles brotheř, wythe few men, that whylle styly went
 out at the south yate, & sharply becryed ham behynd, & smote 20
 vpon ham. throgth that, þat he come so fersly vpon ham, thay wer
 so afrygh, that thay wyst nat ođ whych syde thay shold kepe the
 fyght: yn a lytell whyl thay wař dysconfyte, & toke ham to flyght
 toward hař shyppes. these otheř come ham betwene, & slowe ful 24
 many: theř was Iohn the Wood I-slayn, & ful mych folk wyth
 rout the hym, throught Walter de Redlesford, that ful stalwarth was yn the
 Norse, and drive them to their ships. John the Mad is slain.
 Hasculf threatens his conquerors, fyght. Hascoyl was I-take fro the shyppe theř he was to I-flow,
 & I-broght alyues yn-to the Cyte, & hys lyf I-graunted for 28
 raunceođ; bot as he stode yn court to-foř Myles, he put forth
 lyddyрly a prout word & seyđ, “wyt lytell power we comen now,
 & thys nas bot assaye of our myght; bo[t] yf I lyue, ař hyt be lange
 to, shal come otheř so mych as þese.” Whan thys was I-hard?—for 32
 yđ the mannys tonge hys oft lyf & deth, & me seyth eke, ‘Tong
 breketh bođ, thegh hym-self ne hawe none’—Myles bad that

¹ MS. mok. Lat. ‘humilium erector.’

tha[t] a man hym dreddyd than lowyd ; the nobil and the ryche A. D. 1171.
 he wold brynge to noght ; the meke and the Pouer he wold awaunce ;
 al men ayeynes hym, and he ayeynes al men //

[CHAPTER XIX.]

Aftyer that, about whitsontyd, Hastoyl, that was Somtyme Capitalum
 Maystyr of Deuelyn,—as man that fayne was about forto be xix^m.
 awengid of his old wreth,—come wyth men of North-Wey and of
 the North ylon dys, wyth many pepil, in fourty grete shippys, and sexaginta
 londyd in the hauyn of Amlyffy, *with* har captayne that was callid navibus.
 Ihoñ the Woode¹. Thay wentyn out of har shippis, men wel 1 Insano
 wepenyd, Some *with* longe Swerdys, Some *with* Iryñ Platys and vel Vche-
 rounne sheldys, wel bound aboute *with* Iryñ, Swerdys and Speres menti.
and axes ynow, *and* comyn wel ordeynly forto assayle the toun on alii
 the Eeste halue. * Myles de cogan, Keperø of the Citey, Kynly laminis
 Bolde and Hardy, Wyth Welle schosyn pepill, went out ayeynes ferreis arte
 ham and yafe ham fyght ; but stronge hit was to holde fyght ayeyn consultis.
 so many *with* so few ; than had he lost Some of his men ; and o
 knyghtes thegh was kut *with* the lappe of his haubergeoñ, *with* cum panno
 a stroke of a dennysñ axe. nedes he moste turne aye at the yate, loricæ
 tyl that Richard de cogan, Miles-Is brodyr, *with* few men, that præcisa.
 whyle went out at the south yate, and sharply becryed ham ipsos a
 behynde, and Smote vpon ham. throgh that, that he come so Fresly tergo
 vpon ham, thay were so aferde, that thay wyst not on what Syde acriter
 thay sholde kepe the fyght / In a lytyll whyle thay wer dyscom- excla-
 fyte, and toke ham to flyght toward har shippis. thes oþer come mando,
 ham be-twen, and kyllid ful many. ther was Ihoñ de woode percussit.
 y-slayn, And ful mych pepil *with* hym, throw Water de Redeles- Johanne
 ford, that ful bolde was in that fyght. Hastoil was take fro the quoque
 shipe ther he was to fiede, and brogh[t] alyues into the Cite, *and* Vchementi.
 his lyfe gravntid for Raunceoun ; but as he stode in courte to-for
 Miles, he sayd lewidly a prowte worde : “ Wyth lytil pepil we come
 now, And this was not but assay of oure myght ; but yf y lyue,
 ar hit be lange to, shal come othir so mych as thes.” Whan this
 was herde,—For in the manes tonge is ofte lyfe and deth ; And as
 hit is Sayd, Tonge brekyth bone, thegh hym-Selfe ne haue non,—
 Miles commandid that he shold anone out be-ladde, and to Smyte In manibus
linguae,
mors et
vita. Prov.
 xviii. 21.

A. D. 1171. men shold hym anoon out lede, & smyte of þe heed. & thus, for and is
 beheded. hys hauteyn & prout spech, he lost þe lyf that thaȝ-by-foȝ mekely
 hym was graunted.

[CHAPTER XX.]

[Fol. 110a.] **S**one aftyr thys, many of thay that weren y-come 4
 yn-to Irland wyth the Erl, & eke to-fore,—for the kynges
 As Henry II's edict leaves
 Struguil bare of men and food,
 the Irish muster a big army, and besiege Dublin.
 Gothred, King of Man, and others,
 with thirty ships, beset Dublin Harbour.
 After two months' siege, and when food is scarce,
 news comes that Robert Stevenson is besieged in Carrick Fort.
 Maurice and Reimund Fitz-Gerald are in Dublin.

byddyngge that come to ham, as hyt ys to [1]d a-foȝ,—leften the
 Erl, & wenteȝ yn-to england. The peple of yrland saw the erl
 narow beladde, both of hys meȝ That hym left, & of vytalle that s
 trukked, wheȝ-of he hade grete plente theȝ-by-fore out of eng-
 land. Thay gaddered ham to-gedders myche folk, al þe prynce
 of the lond, with al haȝ poeȝ, & besegeden deuelyȝ oȝ euery
 halue; & that was throggh *procuryȝ* of laurence, Erchebysshoppe 12
 of dyuelyȝ, as men seyȝ, for loue of hys folk. he sent also hys
lettres, with Oconghours *lettres*, kyng of Connaght, to Gothred,
 kyȝ of Manne, & to otheȝ prynces of þe northȝ ylondes, for to
 be-sete the hauyȝ of dyuelyȝ; & large yiftes & *presentes* ham 16
 yaue, & myche more hem behete, for to helpe ham. &, for thay
 drede ham of al such manere of *aventures*, Throggh that, that the
 englysshe-men hadden so wel I-conquered vpoȝ þe yrysshe, Thay
 comeȝ the rather ham to help; & yn lytell whyle came .xxxvi. 20
 shypys ful of stalwarth men wel arayed to fyght, & besetteȝ the
 hauēȝ of amlyffy. Whan the Erl & hys men wereȝ well twey
 monthes beleȝȝ yn the syte of dyuelyn, & to ham come non helpe,
 netheȝ of þe lond ne on watyȝ, & vytaylle fast ham slaked; & (as hyt 24
 ys oft I-found, selde be-falleth oȝ harme that more [ne come]) come
 Donald, Macmorghes sone, of okenseley, to The Erl, & told hym
 for that Robert steuenes-son was beseget yn hys castell that he had
 rered at þe carryke, of þe Cyteȝeyns of weysford & the men of ken- 28
 sely, well pre thousand men; & few men had wyth hym; [&, but
 hym] come socours by the pryȝ day, that of hym, ne thay that
 with hym wereȝ, neuer no more to thynke. In the syte of dyuelyn,
 weȝ that tyme be-left with the erl, Moryche fytz-Geraud & Reymond, 32
 that froȝ the kyng was comeȝ newly; sory for ham-self & for
 hars: & thegh þey weren yn grett angwysse foȝ ham-seleue, thay
 wareȝ yn wel more foȝ haȝ good brother & for hys, that amonge

of his hede. And this had he for his proude Speech loste the lyfo A.D. 1171. that thar-by-for mekely hym was graundid.

[CHAPTER XX.]

Sone aftyr this, many of them that weryn come into Irland *Capitulum xx^m.*
with the Erle, and also tofor,—by the kynges comandement that come to ham as hit is to-for told,—lesten the Erle, and wentyn into england. The pepil of Irland Saue the Erle narrow by-lad, *videntes Hibernici comitem et suos, tam suorum jac-tura, quam victualium defectu . . . jam deficientes.*
both of his men that hym leste, and of vytayle that trukked, wher-of he had grette plente ther-before out of Englonde. Thay gaderid ham to-gederis mych pepill, al the princes of the londe *with* al har Power, and be-segedyn Deuelyn on euery syd. and that was by procvrynge of laurance, Archebishope of Deuelyn, as men sayd, for loue of his Pepil / Also he sende his *lettres*, *with* o-conghoure-is *lettres*, kyngē of connaght, to Gothrede, kyng of Man, and to othyr Princes of the northe ylonde, for to be-Sette the hauyn of Deuelyn; and large yeftys and presentis ham yaue, and mych mor ham promysid, forto helpe ham. and, for thay dred ham of al Suche adventures, Throgh that, that the Englysh-men haddyn So wel conqueryd vpon the Irysh, Thay comyn the radyr ham to helpe. and in lytyll whyle came xxx^{ti}. shippis, ful of bold men wel arrayid to fyght, and be-setten the hauyn of amlyffy. whan the Erle and his men weryn wel two monthys besegid in the Cite of Deuelyn, and to ham come no Soccovr on lond ne on watyr, [* Fol. 10 a.]
* And Vytayle ham falid, (and as Hit ys oft founde, Selde befallyth one Harme that more ne comyth aftyr, and euer gaderyth to helpe more and more,) Come Donald, Macmurghes sone of Okensely, to the Erle, and tolde hym, for that Robert Steuenes-Sone was besegid in his castel that he had rerid at the Karrike, of the Citteseynes of weysford, and the men of Okenseley, wel iije. M^t. men; And few men had *with* hym; and, but hym come Socoure by the thyrd day, that of hym, ne thay that *with* hym weryn, neuer no more to thynke. In the Cite of Deuelyn, wer that tyme leste *with* the Erle, Morice fiz Geraud, and Reymond, that from the kyng was come newly, Sory for ham-Selfe and for haris. and thegh they wer in grete angwysche for ham-Selfe, they weryn in wel more for har good brodyr, and for his, that amonge his enemys was besegyde, in *sed cum-lante semper in-commoda fortuna sinistra. quasi tribus virorum milibus tam suorum quam sui non meliocriter anxietate turbati.*

A.D. 1171. hys fomen was beseyget, yn place febly I-garnset, but a dych & a Maurice hegge of thornes vpon, & lytell ost ston-wal. Moryce arose vp Fitz- to-fore the erl & the knyghtes, & seyde: "Nat to delytes, ne Gerald ydelnes set to drawen, come we nat yn-to thys lande; both¹ for to 4 harangs his men: sechen aduentures, & prouen ouer streynth vpon peryl of ouer heedes. We haue I-stond awhyle & heghest, & now we bene the highest: y-turned to the lowest, for so goth þe sykenesse of thys world; we are now the lowest. euery gladnesse ys endet wyth sorowe, & euery selth hath wnselth 8 at þe end. After þe bryght day, cometh the durke² nyght; & after, the durknesse of * þe nyght ys away I-dryuen with þe lyght of þe sone. Ar thys, the ouer-hand was yn all styddes ouer, & plente of alle good; nowe beth so beloken, that non help vs ne 12

"No help can come to us. may come, noþer by lond ne by watyr. On oper halue, Robert steuenes-sone, whos herdy herth opened vs þe wey yn-to þys land, ys beseged fer wyth hys fomen ynd folk place. What ybyde we? haue we any hope that ouer lond-folk vs come to helpe? thaer-to ne 16 tryst we nat; for we beth now yn such law I-sette, þat as þe Iresshe wer, ar thys, to the englyshe, also þe englysshe beth now to þe Iresshe. thaer-for gow owt stalwarty, assayllen ouer fomen!

"Let us fight! Tho' few, we've heart, and can beat our naked foes." thegh we few be, we beid men of herth, & wel I-wepned! ne shal 20 neuer naked rascayll, thegh þey many be, haue myght ne power vs to wyt-stond." Whan moryce hadde thys I-seyd, Reymond, þat was I-smyte wyth the same sorow of herth, seyde to ham þe same wordes, & mych moer, 'that thay wollden allerformest smyth vpon 24 þe kyng of konnaght, & hym that was heed, & formest & heghest of ham alle.' Al that ther weren, heldeid herto, & ren astryf to wepne ham, & leppen to hors, & deled ham a thre, thegh thay fewe weren. In þe formest, was Reymond with twonty knyghtes; 28 In þe otheer, myles wyth .xxx^{ti}.; In þe pryde, the Erl & morice, with fourty knyghtes & Squerys; & men an-hors & a-foot, to euery of these I-sete, as hyt wold by-falle: thay went ham out of þe syte styllly, about noon-dayes, & with so few men assaylyden and 32 hostes of .xxx^{ti}. thousand. Reymond, amonge the fyrst, smote vpon ham; & feyr to-for al otheer: he smote tweyne throgth-out wyth a speer. Reymond & Moryce twey sonnes, Geraud & Alexander,

¹ but.² MS. druke.

place febilly garnesyde, but a dyche and a hegge of thornys vpon, and a lytil stone wal. Moryce aros vp to-for the Erle and the knyghtes, and sayd: "Not to delytes, ne ydylnes, come we nat into this land; but forto sechyn adventures, and proven oure Streynth vpon peril of oure hedys. we haue stonde awhyle, and hygh; and now we ben turnyd to the louyst; for So is the schavnge of this world. the end of euery gladnes is Sorrow. And euery Surnesse hath vnsurnes at the ende. Aftyr the bryght day, comyth the nyght; and aftyr, the durkenes of the nyght is a-way dryveñ with the lyght of the Sone. Afor this, the ouerhand was in al places our, and plente of al goode. Now ben we So belokken, that none helpe vs ne may come, nothyr by lond ne by watyr. On the othyr Syde, Robert Steuenes-Sone, whos bolde hert openyd vs the way into this lond, is besegid fer with his fomen in febyll place. Whate abyde we? haue we any hoppe that oure lond-pepil wil vs come to helpe? tharto ne trust we not / for we byth now in Such lawe y-Sette, that ¹ as the Iryssh wer, or this, to the Englysh, Also the Englysh byth now to the Iryssh. Wherfor go we out boldely assaylyn oure enemys! thegh we fewe be, we ben men of herte and wel wepenyd! ne shaft neuer nakyd raskayl, thegh they many be, haue myght ne powere vs to wythstond." Whan Morice had this sayd, Reymonde, that was Smyte wyth the Same Sorrow of herte, sayde to ham the same wordis, and mych mor, 'that thay woldyn alther-formyst Smyte vpon the kyng of connaght / and he that was hede and formyst of ham al.' Al that ther weryn, heldyn herto, and went to wepyn ham, and leppyn to hors, and delyd ham on thre, thegh thay few were. In the formyst, was Reymond, with twenty knyghtes; In the othyr, Milis, with xxx^{ti}. In the thyrd, the Erle and Morice wy[th] fowrty knyghtes, and Morice with fourty knyghtis and Squyeris; and men an-hors an[d] a-fote, to euery of thys y-sette, as hit wolde befall. they went ham out of the Cite Softely, about noon dayes, and wyth So few men assayledyn an hoste * of xxx^{ti} M^t. Reymonde, amonge the fyght, fryst Smote vpon ham, and ferre to-for al othyr. he Smote two throgh-out with a Spere. Reymond and Morices two Sonnes, Geraud and alex-

*Non ad
delicias,
viri, non
ad otia
vocati.*

*Aurilium
nobis, nec
mare
mittit, nec
classis
inimica
permittit.*

*ut sicut
Hibernicis
Angli, sic
et Angli
Hibernici
simus.*

*hora quasi
post
nonam.
[* Fol. 10
b.]*

¹ In the margin, 'as we byth ynglys on to the gryssh, so we byth gryssh on to the ynglys.'

A.D. 1171. thegh they weſ fyrſt y-ſete yn þe lateſt of þe hoſt, throgh kynd
 The little ſtalwardneſſe hertly ſmytten out to the formeſt, & many dydden
 Engliſh hoſt rout to deth. Alle þe otheſ freſſhely foloweden after; & yn lytell
 the 30,000 whylle dyſconfited al þe hoſte, & ſloweð ſo many, that no tonge
 Irifh, ne myght tell. Oconnoghough, þat that tym ſatte yn bathe,
 and return vnnethe eſcaped: thay folwed the dyſcomfytuſ on euery halue
 to Dublin tyll þe nyght ham leth. Than thay turned ayeyne, & name haſ
 with great ſpoil. They pelfre, gold & ſyluyſ, clothes & wepne & hors, & wenteð wyth
 march (too mychel gladneſſe yn-to þe ſyte. Amorow þay lefte good kypynge
 late) to yn the ſyte, & turneden toward weyſford by Odroon, wyth baners
 aid Fitz- y-lacet, for to ſocour Robert ſteuenes-ſone.
 Stephen.

[CHAPTER XXI.]

[Fol. 11 a.] **T**he mene time, the folke of Weyſford, wythe þe power¹²
 Fitz- of Okenſely, wel thre þouſand men, ayeyn haſ othes I-ſweſ
 Stephen's & haſ trowth, Robert ſteuenessoð al vnwardly, with fyue knyghtes
 ſcanty & a few bow-men I-found withyn hys feble caſtel, thay ſtynt nat to
 garrison defend theſſelves bravely. assaylle. thay defendet ham full ſtalwarthly, thegh they fewe weſ; ¹⁶
 & namely a knyght that hete Wyllyam Not, aftyſ Robert, ouer al
 otheſ beſt dydde. Whan thay myght nat wyth ſtreynth ſpede,
 thay bethoght ham that wyth falſhed & wyth treyſon they wold
 come wyth-yn ham. They ſent to þe dyche twey byſſhoppes, ²⁰
 The Irifh deceive them; that on of Weyſford, that otheſ of kyldaſ, & otheſ mo wyth ham
 yn habyt of relygyon; thay broght with ham maſſebokes, &
 Corpus domini, & relykes many, & ſworne vp-on ham al, & vpoð
 haſ owne ſoules, that 'dyuelyn was Itak; & þe Erl & morice & ²⁴
 Remond, & the engliſſhe-men, euerychon I-ſlawe; the hoſt of
 leynſtre & of Connaght comyng to ham-ward; & for good of
 hym, thay weſ to hym y-come; that he ſhold yeld vp his caſtel,
 & me ſhold ſaue hym lyf & lym, & al his & al har good; for he ²⁸
 was ham ſo fre & ſo meke lord, me ſhold trewly brynge hym
 & his ouer in-to Wales ar the grete hoſte of his fomen to hym
 comen, that nothyng nold ſpaſ hym.' Robert leued haſ ſpeche &
 haſ falſ othes; he came out & yeldet hym & his, to ham & to haſ ³²
 trowth. They weſ no rapſer out I-comen, that me ne name ham
 euerychone; & ſome thay ſlowen yn þe place; ſome þay vndide
 & betten liddyly & bonden; & wyth ham ſelfe I-bounden, keſten

andyr, thegh they were fryst Sette in the laste of the hoste, throug
 kynly bolul¹ hertely Smyten out to the formyst, *and* many dyddyn
 to deth. Al the othyr freschely folwedyn aftyr; And in lytyll
 Space of tyme dyscomfyted al the hoste, and slowyn so many, that
 no tonge myght tell. Oconghoure, that that tyme Satte in bathe,
 vnneth Escapid. thay folwid the dyscomfiture on euery halue tyll
 the nyght ham lette. Than thay turned ayeÿne, and toke har
 pilfre, gold and Syluyr, clothis, and wepyn and hors, *and* wentyn
 with myche gladnes into the Cite. A-morrow thay lefte good
 kepyng in the cite, and turned toward Weysford by Odrooñ, wyth
 baneres ylacyd, forto Socoure Robert Steuenes-Sonne.

[CHAPTER XXI.]

The men-tyme, the pepil of weysford, with the Power of
 okenseley, wel iij^e. M^r. men, ayeÿn har othis Sworne and har
 trouth, Robert Steuenes-Sonne al vn-wittyng, with v. knyghtes
 and a few bowmen, fownde within his febil castel, thay stynte not
 to assaile. thay defendyd ham ful boldely, thegh they fewe were;
 and Specialy a knyght that was callid William Not, aftyr Robert,
 ouer al othyr best dyd. Whan thay myght not with streynth
 Spede, thay bethoght ham that with falshede and with treysone
 thay wolde come within ham. Thay Sende to the dyche two
 bysshopis, that one of weysford, that othyr of kyldare, and othyr
 mo with ham in habit of religion. thay broght with ham masbokes
 and Corpus domini, and relykis many, and Sworid vp-on ham al,
 and vpon har owyn Soulys, that 'Deuelyn was take; and the Erle,
 and Morice and Reymond, and the Englysh-men, euerychoñe were
 Slayn; and the hoste of leynystre and of connaght comynge to ham-
 ward; and for good of hym, thay were to hym come; that he sholde
 yelde vp his castel, and thay wold Sawe his lyfe, and al his, and al
 har good; for he was to ham so fre and So meke lorde, they wold
 trewely bryng hym and his ouer into walis, or the grete oste of
 his enemys to hym were come, that nothyng wolde hym Spare.'
 Robert belewid har Spech and har fals othys. He came out, and
 yeldyd hym and his, to ham and to har trouth. They were no
 radyr out-come, than thay toke ham euerychone; and Some thay
 Slowyn in the Place; Some thay vndide and bettyn vickydy²; and

A.D. 1171.

innatae
tamen
strenuitatis
indicio . .[¹ for
'bolnys',
59/14.]victualibus
et rectoris,
spoliis
quoque
et armis
onerati.Capitulum
xxj^m.Stephani-
dem im-
provisum.ad con-
suetudine
fallaciae
tela fig-
mentaue
dolosa con-
currunt.Stephani-
dae ipsius
commodi
causa.² alii ver-
beribus,
alii vero
vulneribus
gravior
afflicti.

A.D. 1171. willych In preson. Nat lonḡ theŕ-after, come soth tythyngges of
 The Irish the dysconfytur̄ of dyuelyn, & the Erles comyn̄g toward ham.
 traitors the thraytours, whan thay hyt wysteñ, thay setten haŕ own toun
 burn Wex- of weysford afyŕ, & barnen hyte; & wenteñ ham-self, with wyf & 4
 ford, and go to the
 Island of of weysford afyŕ, & barnen hyte; & wenteñ ham-self, with wyf & 4
 Begeri, chyld, & al haŕ oper good & haŕ presons, ynto þe Iland of begger-
 with Fitz- ynḡ, þat hys I-sete yn the entre of the hauen of Weysford. Þe
 Stephen. host of leynester come ayeysn hym yn Odrone, & yaf hym fyght
 In the pass of Odroon, yn a paas of o thykke wood, strange yn hym selue, & comerous. 8
 Striguil Theŕ weŕ many of the Irysshe y-slaw yn that fyght; & þe Erl &
 defeats a al hys cameñ hole & sound yn-to þe pleyne, sawe o man that he
 Leinster per forlese; & meyleŕ, ouŕ al otheŕ, as hys wone was, stalwardly
 force. hym thaŕ byladde. ¶ After that, as thay comyñ toward Weys- 12
 The Wex- ford, comen̄ meñ ayeysn ham, & tolden ham the aduentur̄ of
 ford men threaten to kill Fitz- Robert, & of the touñes bernyn̄g, & seydeñ ham sykerly, that 'yf
 Stephen &c. The pay to ham wold vend anoon, pay wold sle haŕ presons, & send
 English hear of the ham the heeddes.' Whañ thus was y-hard amonḡ the oste, who-so 16
 loss of the Carrick had I-hard þe wepynḡe, & the wenynḡe, & the sorow that thay
 garrison, mad, he myght wel sygge that 'neuer-more sych reuth was amonge
 and weep meñ I-sey.' he was mañ that noon otheŕ was hys eunynḡe In all
 for it. goodnesse¹, & ensampell to all knyghtes that any stalwarthnesse 20
 [* Fol. 11 wold begynnynḡe; * ffor yn-Wales & eke yn Irland many aduentures
 b.] both god & yuel had I-fond, that ofteŕ weren hys aduentures hard,
 thegh thay som tyme welcomen̄ wyth hym. He was man mych
 Robert of body, ² fayr vysage, soft & rody, nat ful becumliche; grete 24
 Fitz- meet-yeuer, large & fre throḡh al thynḡe, & of grett solace yn
 Stephen described. Iappynge & pleynḡe; bot to mych, & vnmesurable, he yaf hymself
 Richard, lecherye². The Erl was man of suche manere; ³ he was samroed,
 Earl of with grey eghen, wommanes vysage, & sproty, smal spech, 28
 Striguil described. short nek³; on al otheŕ manere he was of fayŕ body, & alonge
 fre & meke; ham that he hade nat to yeue to, he quemed ham
 with fayŕ spech: out of wepne, he was as redy to otheres byddynḡe

¹ O virum, virtutis unicum, verique laboris exemplum.—*Op.* v. 271.

²⁻² vultuque decenti; et statura paulo mediocritatem excedente: vir dapsilis et largus, liberalis et jocundus, sed vino Venerique trans modestiam datus.—*Op.* v. 271-2.

³⁻³ Vir subrufus, lentiginosus, oculis glaucis, facie feminea, voce exili, collis contracto.—*Gir. Camb. Op.* v. 272. Rolls Series.

boundy[n]; and with hym-Selfe y-bound, kesten vnmercyably in A.D. 1171.
 pryson¹. Not lange ther-aftyr, come trew thythynges of the dyscom-
 fyture of Deuelyn, and the Erlis comynge toward ham. the
 traytours, whan thay hit Vndyrstode, thay Setten har owyn toune
 of weysford afyre, and brentyn hit / And wenten hame-Selfe, with
 wyfe and chylde, and al hare othyr good and har prisoneres, into the
 Iland of begeryn, that is at the Entrest of the hawyn of weysford.
 the Hoste of Leynystre come aycynys hame in odroon, and yafe
 ham fyght in a paace of thyke wodde, strange in hym-* Selfe, and
 comeros². Ther wer many of the Iryssh Slayn in that fyght; ande
 the Erle and al his came hole and Sounde into the Playn, Saue
 o man that he there forlese. And Meylere, ouer al othyr, as he
 was woned, boldely hym there bore / Aftyr that, as thay comen
 toward weysford, came men toward hame, and toldyn ham the
 aduenture of Robert and of the tounes brennyngge, and † Sayd ham
 Surly, that 'yf thay wolde to ham wende anoone, thay wolde sle har
 prisoneres, and Send ham the hedys.' Whan this was herde amonge
 pe hoste, who-so hadd herd the wepyngge, and the lementacion and
 the Sorrow that thay made, he myght wel say that 'Such Sorrow
 was neuer amonge men Sey' // He was man, that none othyr was
 his eunyngge in al goodnesse, and Ensampil of al knyghtys that any
 boldnys wolde begynne. for in Walis, and also in Irland, many
 aduentures both good and euyl had fovnde, that ofter weryn his
 aduentures hard, thegh thay Sometime wel comyn with hym. he
 was man myche of body, fayr vysage, Softe and rody, not ful be-
 comlych; good mette-yeuer, large and fre through al thyngge, and of
 grete Solace in Iaypyngge; but to mych, and vnmesurably, he yafe
 hym-Selfe to Lechery //

*ad insulam
 Begeri . . .
 quae et
 sancta
 vocatur.
 [* Fol. 11
 a.]*

*† ex parte
 quoque
 proditorum
 firmiter
 asserentes,
 quod si
 ad illos
 accedere
 forte prae-
 sumant,
 praecisa
 sibi suorum
 capita
 statim
 cuncta
 remittent.*

*Descriptio
 Roberti
 fiz Steuen.*

*A big man,
 liberal, but
 lecherous.*

The Erle was man of Such manere: he was wyth-out doute of
 grey eighen, womanes visage, and Sproty, smale Speche, Short
 neke: on al othyr maner, he was a fayre body, and alonge fre and
 meke. thay that he hadd not to yew, he plesyd with fayre Spech³.
 Out of wepyn, he was as redy to otheres byddyngge, as thay to hym.

*Descriptio
 Ricardi
 Comitiss.*

¹ in carceres, et vincula contruduntur.—*Op.* v. 271.

² quamquam in sui natura arcto nimis et inuio, concidibus tamen plurimum arte munito.—*Op.* v. 272.

³ Quod re non poterat, verborum suavitate componebat.—*Ibid.*

A.D. 1171. as other̄ to hys: alle thyng he dydde by rede of hys men̄, & nothyng wyth-out. Out of bataylle, he had more of knyght than̄ of host-ledēr; yn bataylle, more ledēr than knyght; & yn al aduenturs of bataylle, he was stydfast, ful connyng, & tokne of 4
 Description of Richard, Earl of Striguil. recet to al hys host; & for nōn vnhap he ne amayed hymself, ne yn wanhope ne fel; ne for ne good chaunce, he ne made hym the prutter ne þe more hautaȳn; bot euer-more, yn al aduen[tu]rs, of stydfast herth & trewe. 8

[CHAPTER XXII.]

The Earl of Striguil

Whan the erl hadde I-hard the trayson þat was I-done to Robert, wytht myche sorow of hert he went hym with the host to Watyrford; & þer he fond heruy of mountmorthy, that than̄ wase newēn I-comen̄ out of englond from̄ þe kyng, 12 & broght wryttes, & eke by mych amonested the erl that he shold wend to the kyng. he hade shyppe redy, & good wynd; he name heruy with hym, & went ouer; come to the contre of clandechestre, to Newenham, ther he fond the kyng with mychel 16 host, redy to pass ȳn-to Irland. & after myche speche betwene ham ymade, & myche dalyaunce, thogh heruyes modelyng & comyng about þe erle, & eke hys besechyng, the kyng name of hym manred for̄ to hold leynestre of hym; & the Erl graunted þe kyng, 20 dyuelyn̄, & all the hauen tounes vpon̄ þe see, with hār Candredes & castelles þer-vpon̄ y-set; & that other̄ parte of hys conquestre, he & hys heyres sholdēn holdēn of þe kyng & hys heys. Whan thys was al on thys manere I-done, the kyng toke the wey yn-to 24 south Wales, & cam to pembroke; & ther̄ yn þe contre abode with hys host longe whyle, ār he had wynd for̄ to passe. The whyle that he was thār, he hadde houndes & haukes, as man that mych delyled yn suche game. .O. day he went by the strond of þe see, 28 & bār a mych goshawke of northwey vpon̄ hys hand. Than sat vp-on̄ an hegh clyff ouer the strond, a faucon̄ gentel, negh hys nest, ther̄ he was woned to brede. The *goshake sawe the facon̄, & a-bated to hym. the kyng that saw; & kest hym of hys hand; & 32 he nam hys flyght toward̄ the facon̄, hym fore to henten: the facon̄ sawe hym comyng, & nam hys flyght an heghe, & escaped of hym; þe goshawke turned ayeyne to þe kynges hand; & ār

sails to England, and finds Henry II at Newnham, Glostershire, ready to cross to Ireland. The Earl yields Dublin and all haven-towns to Henry,

who goes to Pembroke, and waits there for a favourable wind.

[* Fol. 12 a.]

Henry's Norse goshawk

Al thyng^e he did by consayle of his men, and nothyng^e without / A.D. 1171.
 Out of battayl, he had more of knyght than of hoste-leder; in
 battayle / more ledder than knyght / and in al aduentures of In praelio
 positus,
 firum suis
 recuperationis et
 refugii
 signum
 manebat.
 battayle, he was stydfaste, ful conyng^e, and tokyn of recette to al his
 hoste; and for no vnhape he was not aferde hym-Selfe, ne in van-
 hope ne felle; ne for no good chaunce, he was not the Pruttyr, ne
 the heyer; but euer-more, in al aduentures, of stydfaste herte and
 trewe.

[CHAPTER XXII.]

WHan the Erle had herde the trayson that was done to Capitulum
xxij^m.
 Robert, with myche Sorrow of herte he went with al the
 hoste to watyrford; and ther he founde heruey of montmurthy,
 that that tyme was come out of England frome the kyng^e, and
 broght writtes, and Eke mych amonneschyd the Erle that he sholde
 wend to the kyng^e. he had ship redy, and good wynd; he toke
 heruey with hym, and went ouer; come to the contrey of clandecestre,
 to New-Enham, ther he found the Kyng^e with grette hoste, redy to
 Passe Into Irland. and aftyr mych Speche betwen ham made, and
 myche delyaunce, throug herueyes medlyng^e and comyng^e about the circum-
 ventu
 pariter et
 interuentu
 Erle, and also his besechyng^e, the kyng^e toke of hym concayle forto
 holde leynystre of hym; and the Erle graunted the kyng^e, deuelyn,
 and al the hawyn tounes vpon the see, with hare candredes and
 castelis there-vpon sette; and that othyr Parte of his conqueste, * He [* Fol. 11
 b.]
 and Hys heyres sholde Holde of the Kyng^e and [his] Heyrys. When
 this Was on this manere done, the kyng^e toke the way into South
 walis, and came to Pembroke¹; and ther in the contrey abode with
 his hoste longe tyme, ar thay had wynd to Passe. The whyle that
 he was there, he hadd houndes and haukys, as man that mych
 delytyth in Such game. O day, he went by þ^e see stronde, and bar
 a mych goshauke of Norway on his hande. Than Sate vpon an hey
 clyfe ouer the stronde, a faucon gentyll, ney his neste, ther he was
 wonyd to brede. the goshauke Saw the faucon, and abated to hym laeva
 projecit
 hym forto smyte. the faucon saw hym comyng^e, and toke his flyght
 an hey, and Escapid of hym. the goshauke turnyd ayeyn to the

¹ Et Penbrochiam veniens, pulcherrimam in brevi Milverdico portu [Milford Haven] classem conjunxit.—*Gir. Camb. Op. v. 273.*

A.D. 1171. he myght fully take to hym, the facon smote to hym from an
 is kild by heyght, & forcleue hym the rygge, & kest hym adoune dede at the
 a Welsh kynges foote. Al thay that hyt saw, hadden ther-of myche wondyr.
 falcon. Than bade the kyng, that fro that tyme, the bryddes of that facons 4
 neste shold euer-mō be I-kepte to hys owne be-houe; & so thay
 wē, euery yeyr; & yn al hys kyng-dome wer nō so good facons
 I-found, ne so bold.

[CHAPTER XXIII.]

O'Rourke,
 king of
 Meath,

assaults
 Dublin,
 early in
 September,
 but is
 beaten off
 by Miles
 of Cogan;
 and his
 son is slain.

The while that thys was, Roueryke, the kyng of Myth,— 8
 awayted that the erl was out of lond; & Reymond &
 lytel folk was beleft ar dyuelyn, the syte & þe contrey for to kepe,—
 with mych folke come to dyuelyn about myd-heruest, & assaylled
 the walles of þe syte with gret streynth & loly crye, & wend 12
 wel to haue I-take þe syte, & al þat þer-In was. bote ther
 streynthys & stalwarthnesse, hyt mote nedes shewe hymself:
 Myles de Cogān & hys mēn preuely wenten out, & smote grymly
 vpon ham, so þat yn lytell whyl thay werēn al dyscomfyted. Bot 16
 roury hymself vnnethe escaped; & hys sone, a welle stalwarth man
 amonge hys folk, was thā I-slawe, wyth many other.

[CHAPTER XXIV.]

Nota: de 1
 primo
 aduentu
 Regis An-
 gliae in
 hiberniam
 Henry II
 lands at
 Waterford
 on Oct. 18,
 1171,
 fulfilling
 prophecies
 of Merlin
 and St.
 Moling.

A ftir̄ this, whan the kyng had I-dyght al that nede 20
 was to so noble comynge ynto Irlond, he went to seynt
 daunes; & besoght the holy mān, seynt dauy, with grett deuocion
 & mych wurshyppe. And tho wedēr hym come, & wynd at wylle.
 He put hym to saylle; passed the see, hool & sound; & arryued at
 Waterford on seynt lukes day, with fywe houndred knyghtes, 24
 & men, an hors an a foot, fulle many. Than was fulfilled a pro-
 phycy that Merlyn seyde: "out of þe Este shal come a fȳr
 berynge, & shal Irlond al about for-swely." And seynt Molyng
 seyde þus: "Out of þe eeste shal come a stronge thondred, & shal 28
 snyte yn-to þe weste, & al the streynth of Ormond adoun brynge."
 He arryued, the yēr of hys kyngedome, senthe; of hys elde .xl.;

¹ Later note in right margin: 'For in Martilogis the king brought 400 great shippes into Irelande, and in short time subdued the whole lande, beinge governed by 5 kynges, all which submitted to the king, except the king of Connaght, who kept himself in woods and marishes.'

kyngys hand; and, Ar he myght fully take to hym, the faucon smote to hym from an hey, and for-clew hym the bake, and kest hym doune ded at the kynges fote. Al thay that hit Saw, ther-of had grete wondyr. ¹Than comandid the kyng, that fro that tyme, birdis of that faucon-is neste shold euer-more be kepe to his owyn behow; and So thay were, euery yere. And in al his kyngdome wer none So good faucones y-found, ne so bolde.

[CHAPTER XXIII.]

THe mene-tyme that this was / Roueryke, the kyng of mythe¹, —be-hekle his tyme, and that the Erle out of lond was, and Reymond and lytil peple was leste at Deuelyn, the Cite and the contrey to kepe,—wyth mych pepyl come to deuelyn about myd hervyst, and assaylid the wallis of the Cite with gret Streynth and grymly cry, and wend wel to haue take the Cite, and al that therein was. But ther streynthis and bolnys, hit mote nede Schow hym-Selfe : Miles de Cogan and his men priuely wentyn out, and smote grymly vpon ham, so that in lytyll whyle thay weryn al dys-comfyted. But Roury hym-Selfe vnneth Escapyd; and his Sonne, a wel bolde man amonge his pepil, was ther Slayn, with many oper.

[CHAPTER XXIV.]

Aftyr this, whan the kyng had dygh al that nede was to So nobyl comynge into Irland, he went to Seynt Dauyes, and besoght the holy man, seynt Dauy, with gret deuocion and myche wyrchippe. and then wynde and weddyr hym come at wille. he putte hym to sayle, and passyd the see, holde and Sounde; and londyd at Watyrford on Seynte Luke-is day, with fyue hundred knyghtes, and men an hors and a foote, ful many. Than was fulfillid a prophesy that Merlyn Sayd thus / “Out of the Este shal come a fyre brennyng, and shal Irland al aboute forswely.” And seynt Molyng said thus, “Out of the Este shal come a stronge thondyr, and shal smyte into the weste, and al the streynth of Ormond adoune brynge.” he londyt, the yere of the kyng-dome, the Senfte; of his age, the xl; of our lordys incarnacion, M^l. Clxxij; and was

¹ rex monoculus Medensis Ororicus . . . cum multitudine magna, circa kalendas Septembris, Dubliniam venit.—*Op.* v. 274.

A.D. 1171.
*1 singulis
rex annis,
circa nidi-
ficationis
tempora,
propter
falcon s
terrae
illius, qui
marinis
in rupi-
bus exclu-
duntur,
mittere
consequit.*
Capitulum
xxiiij^m.

*Sed quo-
niam
virtus
claudi
nescit; et
ignis op-
pressus, in
flammam
erumpit.*

Capitulum
xxiiij^m.

*Nota de
primo
aduentu
Regis
Anglie in
hiberniam.*

*Veniet ab
aurora
turbo
validus.*

A.D. 1171. of our lordes Incarnacion .m.c.lxxij ; & was poppe, Alexander the thryd ; Emperour, ffryderyke ; kynge of ffrance, lowyse.

[CHAPTER XXV.]

Henry II
has Fitz-
Stephen

The kynge abode at Waterford a fewe dayes. Theder come the sytzeins of weysford, & broght to hym Robert 4 steuenesse-sonne, as for gret seruyce, & yn hope of good reward ; ffor as myche as he come yn-to Irlond, lond to conquer, wythout auctoryte of hegher prynce, & yaue other, ensample for to comen ynto the lond. The kynge, at the byggynnyge, told of hym grete 8

[* Fol. 12
b.]

put in
prison.
The King
of Cork
does
homage to
Henry II ;

so do the
King of
Limerick,

and all
the best
folk of
Munster.

Henry II
returns to
Waterford,

pardons
Fitz-
Stephen,
and re-
stores him
his lands.

* vnworthynesse ; & edwyte hym, with grete thretynge, of that grete boldnesse ; & lete take hym, y-bound as he was, & gyued hym to another, & put hym yn Rathnyldestour for to kepen. Soine per-after come the kynge of Corke, Dermot Maccarthy, & yeld 12 hym to the kynge, & dydde hym homage, & swar hym hold othes, & delyuered hym ostages for to be to hym hold & trew, & be hym truage euery yer of hys land. ffrom thus, the kynge went wythe the hoste to lysmore, & ther was twey dayes ; & fro 16 thus, went to Casshle. Theder came donald Obreen, kynge of lymeryke, to hym vpon the watyr of ssur ; & for to haue pees, yeld hym to pe kynge yn al manere as Maccathy hadde done. The kynge set keepers both at Corke & at lymeryke ; & to hym 20 comen the hoste of both contrees aftyr Maccathy & Obreen, & yeld ham to pe kynge, & becomen hys meyn by othes & ostages ; so that ther was none that war of any name yn al Monestre, that by hys good wylle ne yeld hym to the kynge. Whan thys was al I-done, 24 the kynge, with mych wyrsshyppe & wyth ryche yiftes, lete euery man wend yn-to hys owne lond, & went hym-self by Tybrach ayeyne to Waterford. per was ayeyne Robert y-broght to-for hym. The kynge saw hym, & bethoght hym of pe gret goodnesse pat 28 was yn hym, & of hys stalwarthnesse & hys hardy hert ; of many good seruices that he & hys hadden I-done, wyth mych trauaylle & grette perille of lyue : he had grett reuth of hym yn hys hert ; & through besechyng of hegh men, al hys wreth, wyth good hert 32 he hym foryaf, & delyuere hym out of pryson, & lete delyuer hym hys londes pat hym were be-nomen, of Weysford & of pe

pope, Alexandyr the thyrd; Emperoure, Frederike; kyng of A.D. 1171. Fraunce, Lowys.

[CHAPTER XXV.]

THe Kyng abod at Watyrforde a few Dayes. Thedyr come [Fol. 12
a.]
the Cytteseyns of Weysford, and broght to hym Robert *Capitulum*
Steuenes-Sonne, as for grete Seruyse, and in hope of good reward, *xxv^m.*
for-as-mych as he came into Irland, lond to conquere, wythout *quasi sub*
auctorite of heghyr Prince, and yaue othyr ensampil forto come *praetextu*
into londe. The kyng, at the begynnyng, tolde of hym gret *obsequii,*
Vnuorthynys; and reprevyd hym, *eo quod*
Hiberniam
boldnes; and lette take hym, bound as he was, *citra ipsius*
assensum
another, *primus*
intraverit,
and Put hym in Rathnyldys toure forto kepyn. Sone *aliisque*
ther-aftyr come the kyng of Corke, Dermot Maccharthy, and *malignandi*
yelde hym to the kyng, and dyd hym homage, and Sware hym olde *occasionem*
othis, and delyuerid hym hostagis forto be to hym holde *praesti-*
terit,
ber hym truage euery yere of his land. From thens the kyng went *vinctum*
et cap-
tivum
adducunt.
with the hoste to Lysmor, and ther was two dayes; and fro thens
went to Cassell. Thedyr came Donal Obreyne, kyng of Lymerik,
and to hym on the watyr of Sure; and for-to haue pees, yelde hym
to the kyng in al maner as Macchardy hadd done. The kyng
Sette keperes both at Corke and at Lymerike; and to hym come the
Best of both contreis aftyr maccharthy and Obreñ, and yelde ham
to the kyng, and be-comyn his men by othis and hostagys, so that
ther nas none that was holde of any reputacioñ in al Monester, that
by his good wyll ne yelde hym to the kyng. Whan this was al
done, the kyng, with mych vyrchip and wyth ryche yeftys, lette
euery man wend into his owyn lond, And wente hym-Selfe by
Tybraght ayeyne to watyrford. ther was ayeyn Robert broght
to-for hym. The kyng Saw hym, and bethoght hym of the grete *rex vilens*
goodnesse that was in hym, and of his boldnys and his hardy herte, *virum*
of many good seruyces that he and his haddyn donē with mych *tantis for-*
trauayl and grete Perel of lyfe. He had of hym grete Pite in his *tunae peri-*
herte; and, throw besechyng of good men, al his wreth with good *culis, et*
delyuerid hym his londys that of hym wer take fro, of Weysford *toties, ex-*
positum.

A.D. 1171. contrey about. Some syggeñ that the kyng lete to-draw the traytours that hym betrayed; Bot Maystre Geroud ne telleth nothyng *per*-of; & theŕ-fore I ne tel hyt nat to sothe, bot hyt oght well be so.

[CHAPTER XXVI.]

Whan þe kyng had thus I-do, he left at Waterford, Robert beranardesson, wyth mych meyne; &, by Ossery, name the wey toward dyuelyñ. In that wyage, the kyng of Ossery came to hym, & yeld hym to the kyng; & whan he hade I-bydde 8 awhylle at dynelyñ, thedeŕ come Al þe heghest Iresshe-meñ of leynestre, & besoghten pees, & yolden ham to the kyng. Roryke O'conghouŕ, the kyng of Connaght, ayeysn the kynges messagers at the watyŕ shynnen,—that ys to wytted, hugñ þe lacy & wyllyam 12 Henry II's Al-delines sone,—theŕ he yeld hym to þe kyng; & the kyng of Myth Also; So that theŕ nas none heght mañ yn Irland, that ne come to the kynges owne body, or sent messagers for to be-comeñ hys man, & yeld hym to hym, sawe only thay of vlnestre. Than 16 was fulfylled a *prophecye* that seyñth Molyng seyd: “To-foŕ hym shall foot-^{*}falle þe prynces, & trogh¹ boxom-fastines² the lyme of pees shul vnderfonge.” Merlyn seyd an-other: “Tho is lyght, the foules of the Iland shollen togedder fle; & the most of ham, with 20 har wenges I-brant, shollen ouerthrowen yn thraldome; the fyf deles shollen be broght yn-to on, & the syxt shal ouercome the strengest places of Irland.” Whan the mydwyutter came, many of the heghest comen to þe kynges court to feste; & myche wonder ham thocht 24 of the noble *seruice* that þey *per* saw, & of the myche plente of mete & of drynke, of bordes I-sette, & fayŕ clothes vpon; the hegh *seruice* of panetrye & buttellerie, & ryche vessels of gold & syluer; the many *manere* metes of kechen, on the *manere* of England, 28 whych thay had neuer *per*-to-fore I-sey. After that þe fest was heghly & fayŕ I-hold, euery man went wyth gladnesse yn-to hys owne. In that tyme, wereñ bowemen at ffynglas I-horberowed, & wenten ynto chyrche haye, & heweñ adoun trees, that seyntes 32 by old tyme hadden *per* I-sete: *per* came sodeyñ deth vpon ham, euerychoñ. [See Giraldus's *Topogr. Hibern. Opera*, v. 135.]

¹ A later overline *h* is above the *tr* of ‘trogh.’

² or ‘fastmes.’

Master Gerald says no-thing of traitors being drawn and quarterd.

The Kings of Con-naught and Meath yield to Henry II's messen-gers.

Prophecies [* Fol. 13 a.]

of St. Moling and Merlin.

The Irish nobles wonder at the fine meals and decorations at Henry II's fea-st.

Sacri-legious bowmen die sud-denly.

and of the contrey aboute. Some sayne that the kynge lette to draw the traytours that hym betrayed. But Maystyr Geraud ne tellyth nothyng ther-of; and therfor y ne tell hit not for throuth, but hit oght wel be so. A.D. 1171.

[CHAPTER XXVI.]

Whan the kynge had thus done, he lefte at watyrford, Robert Barnardessonne, with mych pepill; and, by Ossory, toke his way to Deuelyn. In that vyage, the kynge of Ossory came to hym, and yolde hym to the kynge. and whan he had bydd awhyle at deuelyn, thedyr came all the heghyst Irysh-men of leynystre, and be-soghten pees, and yeldyn ham to the kynge. Roryke Oconghoure, the kynge of connaght, ayeynēs the kynges messaungeris at the watyr of shynnyn,—that is [to] Say, hugh de Lacy and Willam aldelines Sone,—ther he yelde hym to the kynge; And the kynge of Myth also; So that ther was no man of any reputacioun that he ne come to the * Kyngys owyn Body, or Sent messangeres forto Becomyn Hys man, Saue only thay of vlyster // Than was fulfillid a prophesy that Seynt Molyng sayd: “To-for hym shal foote-fall the pryncys, and through buxumfastnys, the lyme of pees shal vndyrfonge” // Merlynge sayd another prophesy: “To his lyght, the foulys of the yland shullyn to-geddyr fle; and the mest of ham, with har wynges y-brante, shullyn ouer-throwyn in thraldome¹. the fywe delys shal be broght into one, and the Syxte shal ouercome the Strongyst placis of Irland” / Whan the Mydwyntyre came, many of the heghest men comyn to the kynges courte to feste; and mych wondyr thay had of the nobil seruyce that they ther Sawe, and of the mych plente of mete and of drynke, of bordys sette, and fayre clothis vpoñ; the hey Service of panetrye and buttellerye, and rych wesselis of golde and Syluyr; the many maner metys of kechen, on the maner of Englund; whych they had neuer ther-to-for Seyn². Aftyr that the feste was ryaly holde, euery man went wyth gladnys into his owyn. In that tyme weryn bow-men at Fynglas y-herberowid; and wentyn Into church-hay, and hewyn adovn trees that Seyntys by olde tym had ther Sette: there came Sodayn deth vpon ham eueryoñ.

Capitulum
xxvj^m.

nuncia
regis . .
occurrit.

[*Fol. 12
b.]

procidet
principes,
et fucato
sub foedere
pacis
amorem
consequuntur.
sextus
Hiberniae
moenia
subvertet.

¹ corruent in capturam.

² Why wasn't this crane bit englisht? 'carne gruina, quam haecenus abhorrerant, regia voluntate passim per aulam vesci coeperunt.'—Op. v. 280.

A.D. 1172.

Henry II,
wishing to
purify
Irish life,
assembles
the Clergy
at Cashel.

The lond was than yn good pees by-foꝛ þe kyng, & þe pees wel I-hold: the kyng had wel y-hard that þe folk of the lond was of vnclene lyf, & ayeine god & holy chyrche; he thocht that he wold brynge the folk ynto better lyf, & myche desyr hadde theꝛ-to; he leth assembly al þe clergie of þe londe at Casshell, & that me enquered & herd openly the fylthede of the lond-folk yn whych thay ladde haꝛ lyf; & setten hyt ynd wrytte, vnder the bysshoppes sele of lysmore, that was eke legat of þe court of Rome, & heghest of dygnyte ouer al thay that theꝛ weꝛ; & þe statutes of holy chyrche Whych yit meñ halte, yn þe manere þat holy chyrche ham holte yn Englonde, he lete thaꝛ sette: whych statutz, yn the wordes that thay wereñ theꝛ I-swewed, ys non harme thegh me expresse ham here:—

NARACIO. [CHAPTER XXVIII.]

NARACIO.

In the yer of our lordes Incarnaciõ M.C.lxxij, the forme yeꝛ that þe kyng of england, henry, Irland wan; Crystyeñ, bysshoppe of lysmore, & legat of þe court of Rome¹; 16 Dougher, Erchebysshoppe of Casshell; laurenz, Erchebysshoppe of dyuelynd; Cathel, erchebysshoppe of Connaght; wyth leed bysshoppes, Abbotes, priours, & many other prelates of holy chyrche yn Irland, throg the same kynges commaundement 20 comeñ to-geddeꝛ yn þe See of Casshell; & for þe state of holy chyrch to brynge yn-to better fourme, helden theꝛ haꝛ consaylle. To thys conseyl, comeñ these from the kyng I-sent: a noble man Rolf, abbot of byldewdys; Ralf, Erchedekene of landaf; Nychol 24 the prest, & otheꝛ many, the kynges clerkes & hys messagers. The statutes oꝛ constytucions of that consaylle beñ these here I-wrytten, & by the kynges auctoryte I-stablet. ¶ The fyrst ys, that crysten men In Irland shullen leueñ haꝛ kynnes-wommen 28 [+ Fol 13. b.] & heꝛ sybbes, whyche þay have aꝛ thys I-hold to haꝛ wylle out of spoushode, & lawfully spouse otheꝛ wommen, & spousehede lawfully hold². That otheꝛ ys, that the chyldeñ, at þe chyrche dorre shulleñ beñ I-primseined³ of the prestes hond, & yn þe holy 32 fantstones yn haꝛ moder chyrches to be I-fulled⁴. The thrydde,

The Synod
at Cashel,
under the
Romish
Legate,
the Bishop
of Lismore.

Statutes or
Constitu-
tions made
at it:—

1. Irish-
men shall
put away

[+ Fol 13.
b.]

their
concubine
kins-
women,
and marry
legally.

2. Children
shall be
baptized in
church
fonts.

¹ Late sidenote in MS.: 'Establishment of orders for the Clergy, and matters of Religion.'

² repudiato cognatarum et affinium contubernio, legitima contrahant matrimonia, et obseruent.—*Op.* v. 282. ³ catezizentur. ⁴ baptizentur.

The lond was than in good pees by-for the kyng, and the pees wel holde. the kyng herde that the pepil of the londe was of vnclēn lyfe, and ayeyn godd and holy church. he thogh[t] that he wolde bryng the pepil Into bettyr lyfe; and mych desyr had therto. he Sende for al the clergy of the lond at Casshel; and that he Enquerid and herde opynly the fylthed of the lond-pepill in which thay lad har lyfe; and Setten hit in writ, vnder the Bischopis sele of lysmore, that was also legat of the courte of rome, and heyghest of dygnyte ouer al thay that there were. and the Statutes of holy church, whyche yit men halte ¹ in the maner that holy church ham holte in England, he lette thare Sette: Whych Statutes, in the Wordis that thay weryn ther Shewyd, is none harme thegh y expresse ham here:—

[CHAPTER XXVIII.]

IN the yere of oure lord-is incarnacyon M^o. Clxxij, the fryste yere that the kyng of En[g]land, henry, Irland conquerid², Crystyn, Byschop of Lysmore, and Legate of the Courte of Rome; Dougher, Archebyschop of Cassel; Laurance, Arcebishope of Deuelyn; Cathel, Arcebyschop of connaght; with othyr Byschopis, abbotis, pryorys, and many othyr prelatys of holy church in Irland, by the same kyngys comaundement comyn to-geddre in the Cee of Casshel; and, for the State of holy church to bryng into bettyr state, heldyn ther har consayle. to this Consayle comyn thes frome the kyng, that is to say: a nobyl-man Rolfe, Abbote of byldewais; Ralfe, Archedekyn of landaf; Nycol the Preste, and othyr many of the kyngys clerkys and his messagers // The Statutes or constytuciones of that consayle ben this her writtyn, And by the kynges auctorite Stabelid // The fryst is, that crystyn men In Irland sholde lewe har kynnys-women, whych thay haue ar this holde to har will out of Spoushode, and lawfully spouce othyr women, * and Spoushode Lawfully Holde // The Seconde is, that the chyldryn at the church dore sholde be y-primseined of the prestes honde, and in the holy fantstonys in hare modyr chyrchis to be yfullid. The thyrde, that

Capitulum
xxvij^m.

tam enormitibus
quam
spurcitiis.

Statuta
Cassellensia.

¹ *quae adhuc extant.*

Capitulum
xxviii^m.

Catholicus
Tuotuenensis (*Con-*
nactensis,
Harl. 177).

Nicolaus
capellanus.

cognatarum et
affinium.

[* Fol. 13
b.]

² conquesid, MS.

- A. D. 1171-2. that euery crysten man lawfullych^o pay hys tethynges to hys paroche chyrche, of corne & of al othe^r thyng that a ye^r hym aneweth¹. ¶ The ferthe, that al þe londes of holy chyrche & ha^r possessiouns, of al herthly askyng be quyte; & namely, that no kynges ne other heye men, ne he^r sonnes, ne he^r meygnees, mette ne herbrowe yn chyrche londes, ne ask, ne wyth streynth ne be so hardy to take; & that Cursed me[te] that four syth a ye^r was wonet to be asked yⁿ chyrche tounes, & of the next neighbors, neuer eft be asked. ¶ The fyft, that of manslaghttre that lewed men doth, whan man maketh fyⁿ with hys fomaⁿ, the clerkes that ben hys kynnes-meⁿ, no þyng ne yeue ne yeld ther-to; bot, as thay beⁿ gyltles of the dede, also be thay harmles of þe payement. ¶ The syxth, that whaⁿ a man ys seke, he shal make testament openly to-fo^r hys prestes of the parorch, & to-fore hys neighbors; & after hys dettes & seruauntes hyre out take, dele hys catel a thre; yf he hath wyf & chyldreⁿ, that on to hys spoused wyf, that other to hys shyldreⁿ, The thryde to hys testament. And yf he hath non chyldren by spouse, the good be y-deled bytwene hym & hys wyf, euery Ilyche; & yf the wyf deyeth, the goodes be I-deleth a thre bytwene the housbond, & the chyldren, & the wyf. ¶ The .vij. that whaⁿ a man othe^r a woman deyeth, ha^r wathe², & the seruyce of holy chyrche, & the buryeng, be man-shyply I-done. ¶ The .viij. that al meⁿ & wommen wyrshyppe holy chyrche, & oft go to chyrche; & holy chyrche yⁿ al seruyce be gouerned on the maner that hyt ys yn England. In al these thynges, the kynge ynto the lond come, many defautes we^r yn the land I-found, & mych horynesse or oryble synnes that me ne aght nat to speke of, that—through grace of god, & by the kynges purueyaunce & hys myght—weren amendet, & yn better^r wonne I-bro³th. ¶ The prymat of Ardmagh was nat at thys conssaylle, ne thede^r myght come, for he wase old Man & feble; Bot he come the^r-after to dyuelyⁿ, & graunted yn al thyng the kynges purueyaunce. In thys tyme was the wede^r so stronge, & the wynd so awayward, that yn al the wyntyr ne myght no shyppe com ouer yn-to Ireland.
4. Church lands to be left in peace.
5. Clergy not to pay any of kinsmens fines for Manslaughter.
6. Wills to be made openly.
- Property to go to family in thirds, or halves.
7. As to funeral services.
8. All folk to go oft to Church.
- All Ser- uices to be in the English way.
- In winter, no ships can get to Ireland.

¹ 16th century side-note: 'the privileges and frydom gyven to the church, and londs ther of.' ² ? mistake for 'wache,' or *th* used for *k*, as on p. 67, l. 4.

euery crystyn man lawfully pay his thethis to his Parashe church, A. D. 1171-2.
 of corne, and of al othyr thynges that a yere hym aneweth // The iiij^a.
 iiije. that al the landis of holy church and har Possessiones of al animalium,
 Erthly askynge be quyte; and namely, that no kynges†, ne othyr hey frugum,
 men, ne her Sones, ne her menyas, mete ne herbrow in church ceterarum-
 londys, ne aske / ne with streynt ne be So hardy to take; and that que preven-
 Cursed met that foure tymes a yere was wonyd to be askyd in tionum.
 church tounes, and of the nexte neghbores, neuer aftyr to be axed [† MS. nothyng.]
 1.
 The V^e, that of manslaghtre that lewid men doth, whan men makyth v^e.
 fyne with his enemy, the clerkys that ben his kynnys-men, nothyng quoties
 ne yeuc therto; but, as thay ben gyltles† of the dede, also thay be inde cum
 harmeles of the pament. The vj^e. that whan a man is seke, he inimicis
 shal make testament opynly, to-for his preste of the parash and suis com-
 to-for his evyncrystynnes and aftyr his dettis and his seruauntes ponunt.
 vagis out-take, dele his catel athre. yf he haue wyfe and chydryn, [† MS. gyltles.]
 that on to the Spousyd wyf, that othyr to his chydryn, the thyrd
 to his testament. And yf he haue no childe [by] Spouse, the good be 2 inter
 y-delid^d betwen hym and his wyfe, euery y-lyke. and yf the wyfe ipsum et
 deyeth, the good be y-delid at thre ², betwene the hosbonde, and the liberos
 chydryn, and the wyfe / The vij^e, that whan a man oper woman lipartiri
 deyeth, har wache, and the seruyce of holy church ³, and the burienge, debent.
 be wyrchply done // The viij^e. that al men and women wyrchply vij^a.
 holy church, and ofte go to church; and holy church in al seruyce be viii^a.
 gouerned^d on al maner that hit is in England. In al thes thynges, 3 et missa-
 the kyng Into the lond come ⁴, many defautes were in the land found, rum et rigi-
 and mych felth or orribil synnys that y ne oght not to Speke of, liarum ex-
 that,—by the grace of god and by the kynges purueyaunce and his hibitione.
 myght—weryn amendid, and in bettyr state broght // The Primat multimoda
 of Ardmagh was not at this consail, ne thedyr myght come, for he malorum
 was olde man and febill. But he come ther-aftyr to deuelyn, and genera.
 graunted in al thyng the kynges Purueyaunce ⁵. In this tyme was [5 Harl. 177 ends a
 the weddyr so stronge, and the wynd so awayward, that in al the chapter
 wyntyne ne myght no shipp come ouer Into Irland. the kyng here too,
and leaves
out the
Archbp.'s
white cow.]

¹ et quod de villis ecclesiarum cibus ille detestabilis, qui quater in anno a vicinis comitibus exigitur, de cetero nullatenus exigatur.—*Op.* v. 282.

⁴ 1 abl. abs.—Nam ante ipsius adventum in Hiberniam.—*Op.* v. 283.

A. D. 1171-2. The kyng went to Watyrford, & abode theſe a whyle, & ful mych
 [* Fol. 14 a.] Henry II gets the best Irishmen on his side. He hears bad news: 1
 1171-2. He hears bad news: 2
 the proba- ble Inter- dict on his land, and 3
 the treasonous conspiracy of his sons. 4
 He is grievd, 5
 as he wanted to fortify Ire- land, 6
 and keep it. 7

The kyng went to Watyrford, & abode theſe a whyle, & ful mych
 desyre adde for to hyr tythynges from beyont see. & of the
 knyghtes that he fond *yn Irland, he drogh to hym sleghly for
 o coste the beste: as Reymond, Myles de Cogan, wylyyam Masturel, 4
 & other, for to make hys part þe strengeſ, & the Erles parte the
 fobler[so]. ¶ After the myd-lente, come shyppes yn-to Irland, that
 hard tythynges hym broght, & lydder, bothe out of engeland & out
 of fraunce, And normande, & other londes; ffor ynto Normandy 8
 weren ycome twey cardinalles, from the poppe Alexander y-sent.
 (that oon heght Albertus, & that other Theodynus), for to serchen
 & enqueren of the holy martyres deth, seynt Thomas: ryghtful
 men, as me vnderstond, & to that lawfully y-chosen / natheles thay 12
 weren Romayns; & such folweth oft coueytise; &, bot the kyng
 come the rather to ham, the kyngedome of england, & al the londes
 that he was lord of, sholden be entredyted. & (as me fynd oft 1,
 good aduentures comen oft slowly & aloon, bot mesaduentures 16
 ne cometh neuer-more aloon;) wyth thay tythynges comen otheſ
 mychel wers, & of more perylle; ffor the kynges sone, henry, the
 eldest, whyche he so fayne was about to crowne kyng of England,
 & other tweyn of hys bretheren, (that throgh yought & foolrede 20
 hym folwed, & many drogh to ham, both of england & of beyend
 þe see,) waren I-swore to-greddeſ to entre vp-on the kyng, & bynyn
 hys londes, The whyle that he was yn Irland: & wel may be
 that hyt was I-purueyed bytween ham, ar he ynto Irland wente. 24

¶ Whan the kyng thys herd, he was 2 yn grete anguysshe.
 sory he was at the begynnyge, þat he, gyltles, was I-retteſ of the
 holy mannes deth; sore he was afred that hys londes shold bene
 I-shent throught that lydder dede of hys sonne; sore hym for- 28
 thoght, that he the lond of Irland so sone most fore-lete, whyche
 he hade y-cast for to streynth with castell, & stable yn pees, the
 next somer that was to comen. Of al thys, he was yn many
 thoghtes; & spake theſe of fyrst to hymself, þer-after to hys men. 32
 Aftyſ many redes, he sent some of hys ynto England by-fore hym;
 & theſ-after he purueyed how he myght sykyrlychest kepe Irland.

¹ MS. est.² MS. way.

wente to watyrford, and abode ther awhile, and grettely desyr hadd
 forto hyr thythyngis from be-yont see. And of the knyghtes that
 he found in Irland, he drew to hym wylely for o Purpos, the beste,
 as Reymond, Miles de cogan, Willam Masturel and othyr, forto
 make his parte the strongyr, and the Erlis parte the febelier / Aftyr
 the myd-leynte, come shippis into Irland that¹ screwid thythynges
 hym broght / out of England, and out of Fraunce, And Normandye,
 and othyr londes. For into Normandy weryn come two cardynalis,
 from the pope Alexandre Sende,—that one was callid Albert, and
 that othyr Theodoin,—forto serche and e[n]quere of the holy martires
 deth, Seynt Thomas. (ryghtful men, as y-vndyrstode, and to that
 lawfully chose.)² Natheles, they were Romanys; and such *folwyth
 ofte covetys²; and, But the Kyng come the Sondyr to Hame³, the
 Kyngdome of England, and al the londys that he was lord of,
 Sholdyn be Entredytd, and (as y fynd ofte, good aduentures comyn
 ofte Slowely and aloon, but mysaduentures ne comyth neuer more
 al-oon,) Wyth thay thythyngys, comyn moche wors, and of moche
 more Pereyl. For the kynges sone henry, the eldyt, whych he So
 fayn was to crowne kyng of England, and othyr two of his
 bretheryn (that throw youuth and fooly hym folwid, and many drew
 to hame both of England and of beyonde See,) ware Swern to-giddre/
 to Entyr vpon the kyng and take his landis, The whyle that he
 was in Irland: And hit may wel be, that hit was Purveyed be-twen
 ham, ar he into Irland went // Whan the kyng this herde, he was in
 grete a[n]gwysche: Sory he was at the begynnyng, that he, gyltles,
 was yretted of the holy manys deth⁴. Sore he was aferd, that his
 londes sholde ben shente throw that vngoodly dede of his Sonnes.
 Sore hym forthoght, that he the londe of Irland so sone moste leue,
 whych he had Purposid to streynth wyth castelis, and stabil in pees,
 the nexte Somer that was to come. Of al this, he was in many
 thoghtys, and spake therof fryst to hym-Selfe, theraftyr to his men.
 And aftyr many consalys, he Send Some of his men into England
 to-for hym; And there-aftyr he Pvrueyd how he myght Svrly kepe
 Irland /

A.D. 1171-2.

A.D. 1172.

*naves ul-
 veniunt,
 tam gravi-
 tatis nun-
 ciae, quam
 pravitalis.*

[* Fol. 13
 b.]
² nisi citius
 eis rex
 occurrerit.

*fratrum
 puerili
 levitate
 secuti,
 pravissimo
 consilio.*

*tam incas-
 tellare
 quam
 firma stabi-
 lire pace.*

¹ thad, MS.²⁻² sed tamen Romani.—*Op.* v. 285.⁴ se tanta tam immerito suspicione notari.—*Ibid.*

A.D. 1172.

Henry II
leaves
Leaders
at Dublin
to keep
Ireland,and sails
from Wex-
ford on
Easter
Monday.
At St.
Davids, in
Wales,a Welsh-
woman
complains
to him,[Fol.14 b.]
he goes on,and she
appeals
for ven-
geance on
him, to the
stone of
Lechlavar,
the
'speaking
stone'
(prophe-
sied
of by
Merlin
which lies
over a
stream N.
of the
church
yard.As a corpse
was carried
over it, the
stone
spoke.

He left at dyuelyn, the cyte & the contray to kepe,
 hught de lassy, wyth .xx.^{ti} knyghtes ; Robert steuenes-sonne,
 & Moryce fytz Geraud, wyth other .xx.^{ti} at Waterford ; hunfrey
 de boun, Robert Bernardessoñ, & hugh de Gundeuyll wyth .xl.^{ti} 4
 knyghtes ; At weysford, wylliam Al-delines-sonne¹ & phylppe de
 Breuse wyth .xx.^{ti} knyghtes. And a morow after Estre day
 herly, he dydde hym to saylle at Weysford, & arryued at
 seynt dauyes, sone after none. Whan he come a lond, he went 8
 wyth grete deuoccion to the modyr chyrche, as a pylgrymage,
 a-foot, with a burdoñ yn hys hond. Come the chanons of the
 chyrche ayeyne hym at the whyte yate, & with fayr processoun,
 with mych reuerence, & with mych manshype, hym receyued. As 12
 þe processoun yede a rewe to-for hym, come a walche womman,
 & fel hym to þe feet, & made a myche mone, yn hyre langage,
 of the bysshope of that place. The [kyng] stode, & herd hyr
 mone || of an ynterpretour-es mouth that hyt hym told ; & for he 16
 went forth, & dydde hyr no ryght anoon as tho wolde, she smote
 hyr handes to-gyddre, & bytterly began to crye tofore ham Al,
 a walshe langage, "A-wreke vs to-daye, lahlauar ! A-wreke ouer
 kynred & ouer folke of thys man !" Thay that vnderstode hyr 20
 speche, put hyr away, & fore-bade hyre cryyng ; & sho so myche
 the more cryed yn the same manere, & hoped to an old prophecye
 that Merlyn seyde : "The kyng of england that shal wyn Irland
 shal be I-woundet yn Irland of a man with a rede hond ; & as 24
 he cometh ayeyne by south wales, he shal deye vpon lehlauar :"
 Þat was þe name of a stone, that lay ouer a streme by north the
 chyrche heye of seynt dauyes, yn stydde of a brygge. The stone
 was of Marbel wel fayr, & smothe of mannes geynge, & hadde 28
 .x. feet yn leynth, & .vi. yn brede, & a foot thykke. And ys 'lehlauar,'
 a walshe, as mych to sygge as 'a spekyng stone.' And hyt was
 ytold, that som tyme as me bar a dede body ouer that stone,
 he began to speke ; & wyth the spech he claued throughtout ; & yit 32
 the clyft ys I-sene, & yit yn-to thys day me be-bereth no dydde
 body ouer that stone. The kyng come to that stone, & bethoght

¹ Weisefordiae, vero Guillelmo Aldelini filio, Philippo de Hastings, et Philippo de Breusa.—Op. v. 286. [William Fitz-Audeline.]

HE lefte at Deuelyn the Cite and the contray to kepe
 Hugh de Lacy with xx^{ti}. knyghtes, Robert Steuenes-Sone
 and Morice fiz-geraud, wyth othyr xx^{ti}.; at Waterford Humfrey de
 bonn, Robert Barnardes-Sone and Hugh de Gondeuyl, with xl.
 knyghtes / At Weysford, Willam Aldelines sone and Philip de
 Bruse, with xx^{ti}. knyghtes. And amorrow, aftyr estyr-day, Erly
 he did hym to Sayle at Weysford and londid at Seynt dauyes
 sone aftyr noone. Whan he come alond he went wyth grete
 deuocion to the modyr church as a Pylgrymage afoote with a
 stafe in hande. Come the chanones of the church ayeynes hym
 at the white yate; and wyth fayre processiou¹, wyth mych
 reuerence and wyth mych wirchip, hym reseceiwid. And as the
 Procession yede arew to-for hym, come a Walch woman, and fel
 to-for his feete, and made mych mone in hyr Speche of the Bischof
 of that Place. He stod, and herde hyr complaynte of an inter-
 pretoure-es mouth that hit hym tolde; and, for he wente forth, and
 did hyr no ryght anoone as sho wolde, She smote hyr handis to-
 giddy and bittyrly began to cry to-for ham al in walch Speche:
 "A-wreke vs to-day, lathlaur! wreke our kynred and our pepil
 of this man!" Thay that vndyrstode hyr Speche, Put hyr away,
 and forbade hyr cryyng. She so mych the more cried in the
 Same maner, and hopid to an olde prophesy that Merlynge sayde²:
 "The kyng of England that shal conquere Irland [shal be wounded
 in Ireland of a man³] with a rede hand, and as he comyth ayeyn by
 South walis, he shal dye vpon lethlaur": that was the name of
 a stone, that lay ouer a streine⁴ by north the churchey of Seynte
 dauyes, instyd of a brige. The stone was of marbill, * Wel fayr
 and smoth of men goyng, and was of x fote in Leynth, and vj in
 Brede, and O foote thykke. And is 'lethlaur' in walch, as mych
 to say as 'a spekyng stone': and hit was tolde, that Some tyme
 that whan ther wase a dede body y-bore ouer that stone, he began
 to speke; and wyth the speche he clewe throg⁵-out; and yit the
 clyfte as Seyn. And sithyn on-to this day, thay berryth no ded
 body ouer that stone. The kyng come to that stone, and bethogh[t]

Capitulum
xxix^m.

A. D. 1172.

Hugone de
Gunde-
villa.

devoto
peregrin-
antium
more,
pedes,
baculoque
suffultus.

quoniam
jus suum
incon-
tinenti non
est assecutus.

³ ab homine
cum rubra
manu in
Hibernia
vulnera-
tum.

⁴ qui trans
flumen
Aluni . . .
jacens.

[* Fol. 14
a.]

Lapis
loquax

ipso conatu
crepuit
medius.

¹ canonicorum ecclesie processionem . . . invenit.—Op. v. 286.

² alludens illi fictitio vulgari, nec vero Merlini proverbio, quo dici solebat.—
Op. v. 287.

⁵ throught, MS.

A. D. 1172. Henry II walks over the stone, and asks 'Who'll now believe the liar Merlin?'

He hears Mass, and goes to Haverford, and Normandy.

He swears that he didn't slay Beket, but he does penance,

and makes peace with King Lewis of France.

hym of that *prophecye*. & he stode at þe stones end & grymly hyt be-hold ; & awhyle ther-after, boldely yede ouer a good paas. & whan he was ouer, he turned ayeine to þe stone, & deynously þus seyð : " Who shal heten-forward beleue *Merlyn* the leyer ? " A man stode *per* besyde & herd, & wold, hys thankes, saue þe *prophetes* sawe, Answard the kyng & seyð, " Thou art nat that kyng that shal Irland conquer ; ne *Merlyn* ne speketh nat of the." Thus the kyng went yn-to the chyrch, yn seynt *Andrees* & seynt *dauyes* wyrshyppe I-sette, & herd hys masse of a preste that was I-found fastyng, as god wold. After masse, he eete hys mete ther, & after mete wente to *hauerford*, than ouer .xl. myle ; ffrom thens he wente hastily yn-to englande ; out of enland yn-to Normandy, & come to-for þe cardynalls *with* mych *buxumnesse* at *Custance*. Ther, after myche *dalyaunce* & many wordes I-spoke, he excused hym by othes of þe holye *Martyres* deth, that he was nat by hym I-slaw ; bot he ne for-sok nat that he nas for hym ; & *perfor* he vndretoke such *penaunce* as holy chyrche hym wold loke. Þe cardynalls, he sent ayeine wyth myche *wyrshyppe* ; & noon he went to þe *marche*, & ther he spake *with* the kyng of *ffraunce*. *per*, (throgh *besechyng* of *hegh* men, & namely of *phylepe* þe erl of *flaundes*, that from seynt *James* was ryght than I-come,) the pees was made betwene the twey kynges, of the wreth that was betwene ham for the forseyd *martyres* deth ; ffor-*thy* that þe kyng of *ffraunce*, *with* othe^r mychel & myghty men, name an hand to the *erchebyss*shop whan he shold turne ayeine yn-to England, [*ayeyn*] the pees between the kyng & hym. ffor *per* was pees thus y-made betwene the kynges, al the harme þat the sones *with* ha^r allyees hadden thought to do, was I-lost tyl þe next yere the^rafter.

[CHAPTER XXX.]

[Fol. 15 a.] Wnder this, as the lond of Irland was yn good pees vnder ham that weren In leste, the lond for to kepe, byfelle that a day of *parlement*, at a certeyne place, was betaken by-twene *hugh de lacy*, whom the kyng had I-yeue *dyuelyn* to kepe *with* trust, And þe kyng of *Myth*. a nythe, whan the *parlement* shold ben a morow, a knygh[t] that was *Moryce* fytz *Geraudes* newew, & *Robert Gryffyn* by name, thocht yn hys

hym of that prophesy, and he stod at the stone his ende, and grymly hit be-helde; and a whyle ther-aftyr, boldely yede ouer a good pace. *and* whan he was ouer, he turnyd^r ayeyne to the stone, *and* deynously thus sayde: "Who shal, fro this forth, beleue Merlynge the lyer?" A man stode ther bysyd, and herde, *and* wolde, his thanks, Sawe the prophet-is Saynge, Answerid the kyng and Sayde, "Ye ben not that kyng that shal Irland conquere, ne Merlyng Spekyth not of yow" / Thus the kyng went into the church of Seynt Androwis and seynte dauyes, and herde his masse of a preste that was founde fastyng, as god wolde. Aftyr masse he ette his mette and aftyr mette went to hauerford^r than othyr xv myle. Frome thens he went forth hastely Into England, out of England into Normandy and come to-for the cardynals with mych buxumnesse at Custaunce. Ther, aftyr mych delyaunce *and* many wordys spoke, he excusid hym by othys of the holy martyris deth that he was not by hym Slayn, but he forsoke not that he was for hym. And ther-for he vndyrtoke such Penance as holy church wolde hym enyoyn. the Cardynalls, he sende ayeyn with mych wirchip; and anoone he went to the marche, *and* there he spake wyth the kyng of Fraunce. There, (through besechyng of good men, *and* namely of Phylippe the Erle of Flandris, that frome Seynt Iamys was than come,) the Pees was made betwen the two kynges, of the wreth that was betwen ham for the forsayd martires deth; ¹ For-they that the kyng of Fraunce, with othyr mychel men *and* myghty / And vndyrtoke to the archebischope, whan he shold turne Into Englan, ayeyn the pees be-twen the kyng *and* hym. For ther was Pees thus made betwen the kynges, al the harme that the Sonnes, with hare allyences, haddyn thocht to do, was left til the nexte yere ther-Aftyr.

A.D. 1172.

*verbum hoc indignanter emisit.**quasi per miliaria duodecim abinde distans.**ad marchiam cum Francorum rege Lodovico . . .**¹ puta quem Anglorum rex archiepiscopi in Angliam reddituro . . . iussorem donaverat.*

[CHAPTER XXX.]

VNdyr this, as the lond of Irland was in good pees vndyr ham that weryn lefte, the londe for-to kepe, by-fel on a day, that a certayn Place, to a parlement was sette, be-twen Hugh de Lacy, to whom the kyng had yewe Deuelyn to kepe wyth truste, and the kyng of myth. On a nyght, whan the Parlement sholde ben amorrow, a kuyght, that was Morice siz-geraudes emc, *and* Robert Gryffyn by name, thocht in his

*Capitulum xxx^m.**et regem monoculum Oronicium Medensem.*

A.D. 1172. slepe that he saw a mych flote of wyld swyne yernynge vp-on
 Griffith hugh & moryce; & a boore amonge ham, myche & grysly ouer al
 Fitz- otheṛ, come toward ham, & with hys tuskes wold haue smytten
 Gerald's dream: he haṁd & I-slawe, yf he stalwarthly ne had y-come betwene, & 4
 saves
 De Laci, & I-slawe the bore, & I-holpe ham bothe. A morow, thay went to þe
 Maurice place ther þe parlement was I-sette, at a place that me hath seth
 Fitz- y-cleped 'rorykes hylle': ffyrst thay helden har parlement from
 Gerald. ferṛ, by messagers goynge betweṁ; theṛ-after thay name sekernesse 8
 The inter- of othes I-sworne, & comen to-geddre by forward; natheles few,
 view is at of othes I-sworne, & comen to-geddre by forward; natheles few,
 Rorik's & glych fale on etherṛ halue, and thay vnwepened,—bot the one, her
 Hill. swerdes; & the otherṛ, heṛ sparthes,—& ether of har folke somdel
 Griffith fer from ham. Gryffyn, that with Moryce was to the parlement 12
 keeps seven I-come, was ful thought-ful of the vysyoṁ that he sawe. he name
 trusty knights to hym seuyṁ knyghtes of hys owne kyn, than that ho moost
 near. truste to har stalwardnesse, & drowen ham on the on halfe of
 the hylle, as neyght as thay myght leppen vpon har stedes, with 16
 sheldes about haṛ nekkes, & speres an-hond; & for a coste,
 pleneden & prykkeden har hors ayeyṁ other, so that, yn which
 halue the parlement turned, throught encheson of such pley thay
 myght be fonden Redy. Roryk & hugh helden haṛ parlement 20
 of many thyng; bot of nothyng thay myght nat accord, & begyn
 to departe a wrethe. The traytour Roryk had yn hys thoght þe
 O'Rourke traysonṁ þat he hadde I-purueyed. he made semblant, & draw hym
 treacher- by-halues as for to pyssen, & made tokens to hys men that thay 24
 ously De attacks De hastely shold come to hym. Whan he thys hadde I-done, he
 Laci. turned ayeyne wyth hys sparthe an hegh, hys wysage al blak with
 Maurice ful snel goynge. Moryce was Iwarned of hys neuue, of the
 Fitz- vysyoṁ that he sawe; stod, & beheld al thys. he hent out þe 28
 Gerald swerd, & cryed vpon hugh, & mynyed hym, & dyd hym-self ayeyne
 warns De the traytour, for to defend hym. The traytour ran to hugh, hym
 Laci, for to smyte; har latymer yed betwene hym & the dynt; & he
 who is smote hym of the oon arme, fast by the sholdre. Moryce stode, & 32
 saved by campled wyth hys swerd ayeyne the sparthe, & lowd cryed to har
 his inter- men. & ar hugh myght be yn any state, hym-self foṛ to helpe,
 preter, and through grete hastyng, he felle twys || abak; & vnnethe, through
 [|| Fol. 15 helpe of Moryce, that hym defendet thus, Hugh escaped wyth hys 36
 b.] escapes
 alive.

Slepe that he Saw a mych flote of wyld Swyn yernynge vpon
 Hugh and Morice; and a bore amonge ham, mych and grymly *horribilem
 et grandem
 prae aliis.*
 ouer al other, come to ham, and wyth his tuskys wolde haue
 smytten ham Slayn, yf he boldely ne had come betwene, and
 Slayne * the Boore, and Holpyd Hame Both. On the morrow, [*Fol. 14
 they Went to the Place ther the Parlement was sette, at a place
 that Sedyn is callid "Rorike-is hille." Fryste thay heldyn har
 Parlement from fere, by messageres goynge betwen; ther-aftyr thay
 toke Surtey, and othis Sware, and comyn to-giddyr aftyrward.
 Natheles fewe, and ylyke many on euery syde, and thay vnwepenyd,—
 but the on, her Swerdys; the othyr, her Sparthes,—and her felle-
 chip in euery syde fere fro ham. Gryffyn, that wyth Moryce come to
 the Parlement, was ful thoughtful of the vysion that he Saw; he
 name to hym Sewyn knyghtis of his owyn kyn, tham that he
 most truste to har bolthenys, and drowen ham on the one halfe
 of the hille / as neye as thay myght, Leppen vpon har stedes,
 with sheldis about har nekkes, and Sperres in honde, and for oo
 Purpos pleydyn and prikkedyn in the felde ayeyne othyr, So that
 in what syde the Parlement turnedyn, throug encheyson of Suche
 Pley, thay myght be foundyn redy. Rourik and Hugh kepten har
 Parlement of many thyngis; but in nothyng they myght acorde,
 and begon to de-Pert, as in wrethe. The traytoure Rourik had
 in his thought / the trayson that he hadd Purueyed: he made
 semblant, and drow hym be-sydis as forto Pissyn, and made tokyn
 to his men that thay hastely sholde come to hym. Whan he this
 had done, he turned ayeyne with his sparthe an hey, his face al
 blake with ful snel goynge. Morice was warnyd of his eme by the
 vysyon that he sawe; stode, and be-helde al this. he toke out
 his Swerde, and cried vpon Hugh, and mynyd hym, and did hym-
 Selfe agayn the traytoure, forto defende hym. The traytoure rane
 agayn hugh, hym forto smyte. har latymer yed betwen hym and
 the stroke; and he smote of hym the oone harme of, fast by the
 shuldyr. Morice stode, and camplid with his Swerde ayene the
 Sparthe¹, and loude cried to har men. And ar hugh myght be
 in any state², hym-Selfe forto helpe, throug grete hastynge, he fel
 twies a-bac; and vnneth, throug helpe of Morice, that hym defendid

*practer
 hinc gla-
 dios tan-
 tum, inde
 secures.*

*ex indu-
 tria torna-
 mentis
 Gallicis
 praeludia
 faciebant*

*simulans
 ad min-
 gendum.
 vultu
 pallido.*

*prae-
 muniens et
 suscitans.
 viri inter-
 pretis . . .
 letali
 vulnere
 brachium
 amputavit.
¹ contra
 securim
 gladio
 confugebat.*

² estate, MS.

A.D. 1172. lyf. The whyll that thys was, Rorykes men ful many come to hys clepyng, out of dales & wodes about, yernynge to ham wyth speres & *with* sparthes, for to brynge hugh & Moryce out of dawes. Than Gryffyn & hys felewes comeñ yernynge vp on har 4
 O'Rourke hors styffly to ham. þe traytour saw ham comynge, & lep to hors that to hym was broght, & wold do hym to flyght; & as he lepe, vp come Gryffyñ, & wyth hys spere smote hym & hys hors throught, & slowe hem bothe. Wyth hym weñ I-slayne þay that, yn so 8
 is slain by Maurice Fitz-Gerald. mych perylle, the hors hym broght; & hy[s] heed I-smytten of, & yn-to england þer-after to the kyng I-sent; & al hys men yn-to al the feldes dyscomfyte, & I-slawe ful many. Rolf, Robertes sone fytz Stephen, was the other stalwardthest that daye yn the felde¹. 12

[CHAPTER XXXI.]

[Fol.16 a.] Maurice Fitz-Gerald described. **M**orice was a mane ful wyrshypful & chamfaste; vysage wel colowred; becomlyche; lytel of body, sumdele more þan lytel, & lasse than metlych. of hert, & body, wel I-thewed; nothyng hauteyne. of k[i]ndly goodnes, he was good; & leuer 16
 hym was be good, than be sey good; hys maner was euer-more to hold hym methelyche. man of short spech & lytel, bot of fayr wordes, as he that more hadde yn hert than yn mouth, more of wytte & reyson þan of spech. ² Nat forthy³, whan tyme was, & nede 20
 to sp[e]ken, to good reyson forth brynge,—as lettred as he was, as wytty he was². In thyng that byfell to bataylle, swyth hardy, & vnnethes of stalwarthnesse any was hys better; natheles, of perille to take, he was nat to hastyf ne to fool-hardy. bot as he was 24
 thus, & of *purueaunce* thyng to begynne, Also he was stronge & stydfast yn thyng. Whañ he hyt hadde begune. he was sobre, wel I-thewed & chaste, lawful, & stydfast, without blame.

A.D. 1173.

[CHAPTER XXXII.]

In April, Henry II's three sons, **I**n the next auryl ther-after, þe yonger kyng henry, þe 28
 kynges sone, the lyddernysse that he hadde I-thoght to hys

¹ The twelve lines on the back of fol. 15, 'a bak (p. 74, at foot) . . . felde,' were first written by mistake on fol. 16, but afterwards struck out.

²⁻² Et tamen, cum sermonem res exigebat, ad sententiam dicendam sicut serus, sic scientissimus.—*Op.* v. 297.

³ ? MS. Rat fortly.

thus, Escapid wyth his lyfe. the whyle that this was, Rourik his men, ful many, come to his callinge, out of dalis and woddis about, rynnynge to ham with Speres and Sparthes, forto berew hugh and Morice the lyfe. Than gryffyn and his fellows come rynnynge vpon har hors styfly to ham. the traytoure Saw ham comynge, and lep to hors that to hym was broght, and wolde do hym to flight / And as he lep, vp come gryffyn, and wyth his spere smote hym and his hors throught-out, and slayne them both. wyth hym were Slayn thay that, in so myche Peril, the hors hym broght / and his hed Smytten of / and into England theraftyr to the kyng hit sende; and al his men into al the feldis discomfite, and Slayn ful many / Rolfe, Robert-is Sone, fiz-Steuyñ, was the othyr boldyste that day in the felde.

A. D. 1172.

*cum jaculis
binis et
securis
amplis.*

*cum ipso,
tribus ejus-
dem fami-
liaribus.*

[CHAPTER XXXI.]

MOrice was a man ful wyrchiphul and shamefaste; ¹vysage wel colorid; becomlych; lytil of body, sume-whate more than lytel and lasse than metlych. of herte and body, wel thewed; nothyng couetyng. of * Kyndely goodnes, He was good ¹; and Leuer hit Was to Hym to Be good, than to Be sayde good. his maner was euer-more to holde hym methelyche. man of Shorte Speche and lytyll, but of Fayre wordis, as he that more had in herte than in mouthe, more of witte and Reyson than of speche. Nat forthy, whan tyme was, and nede to Spekyn, to good reyson forth bryng,—as letterid as he was, as witty he was. In thyng that befel to battayl, Swyth hardy. But as he was thus, and of Purueyance, thyng to begyn, Also he was stronge and stydfast in thyng whan he hit hadd begonne. ²he was sobyr, wel condiciond and chaste, lawful and stidfaste, wyth-out blame ² /

*Capitulum
xxxj^m.
Descriptio
Maurici fiz-
geraud.
[*Fol. 15
a.]*

*plus pec-
toris ha-
bens quam
oris, plus
rationis
quam ora-
tionis, plus
sapientiae
quam elo-
quentiae.*

[CHAPTER XXXII.]

A. D. 1173.

IN the nexte Aurel ther-aftyr, the yongyr kyng henry, the kynges Sonne, the Wickidnys that he had thoght to his fadyr done / nolde no longyr helle, wyth his two bretheryn that

*Capitulum
xxxij^m.*

¹⁻¹ vultu colorato, decentique; mediocri quadam modicitate, tam mediocribus minor, quam modicis major; vir tam animo quam corpore modificato, nec illo elato, nec hoc dilutato; innata vir bonitate bonus.—*Op.* v. 297.

²⁻² Vir sobrius, modestus et castus; stabilis, firmus atque fidelis.—*Ibid.*

A. D. 1173. fadyr nold no lenger hellen; *with* hys twey bretheredⁿ—that ys to wytte, the Erl of peytou & the erl of brytayⁿ¹—wenten to the kynge of ffrauce, whose doghte^r he hadde I-spoused, & purchased helpe of hym for to wer^e vpon hys fady^r. The enchesoⁿ whe^r-fo^r 4
 Henry, Richard and Geofrey, get French help, and rebel.
 Henry II dernelly. The old kynge, the yonger^e kynges fady^r, fo^r the fortune 8
 that hym come to oⁿ euery halue so vnwarly, was ful sorowful.
 draws most of his men from Ireland. They come to him at Rouen. [† Fol. 16 b.]
 He commits Ireland to Earl Striguil and Reimund Fitz-Gerald.
 C Nathales, through gret sleight & hegh^e herth, he made fay^r semblant, & heped to god; & oⁿ euery syde that he myght, yn al maner he besoght help. He sent messagers ynto Irland, & mad come ouer 12
 to hym the meste parte of the knyghtes & of the good meygne þat he ther hadde I-lefte. Thay come to hym at the cyte of Ruem, & he bethogh hym that † hyt was perylle to leue har lond vnkepet; ther he betoke þe Erl Rychard al þe lond to kepe, & sette to hym 16
 Reymond as hys othe^r hand; ffor the erl for-soke al out & out, þat he that kepyng wold nat receyue, bot yf he hadde Reymond *with* hym for to helpe.

[CHAPTER XXXIII.]

Most Irish, hearing of the Princes' rebellion, turn against Henry II.
 The English demand to be put under Reimund Fitz-Gerald. They invade Offaly, in Leinster,
 The Erle [&] Reymond, *with* ha^r power, wenten yn-to 20
 Irland; &, for the folk of yrland hade y-hard of the mych stryff that was betwene the kynge & hys sonnys be-yent the see,— as folk þat styddefast ys yn vnstedfastnesse, & lawfully ham holt to vnlawfulnessse,—the most parte of the prynces of þe lond, ayeyn 24
 har trouth I-found, þay turned ayeyn-to the kynge. The erl hadde sone I-spend the traysou^r that he broght ouer wyth hym; & whan the meygne lacked spendyng, & nat speden yn prayes takyng vnder heruy, that was conestable ouer the meygne, & euer hadde 28
 enuy to Reymond, Thay wenteⁿ ham to the erl comynly by one accorde, & sey hym wel, that ‘bot yf he wold sete Reymond ouer ham, thay wold leue hym euerychone, & wend yn-to england; oper, that wel wors was, thay wold turnet to ha^r enemyes ayeyns har 32
 heed.’ As the meygne wold, Reymond was I-sette ouer ham; thay name than hert to ham, & wenten vpon the Ofolanes yn the dees,

¹ Pictaviae scilicet et Britanniae comitibus.—Op. v. 297-8.

is to Say, the Erle of Peytoun *and* the Erle of Brytayne, wentyn A.D. 1173.
to the kyng of Fraunce, whose doghtyr he had Spousid; *and* ad Lodo-
Purchasid helpe of hym forto were vpon his fadyr. The encheyson ricum,
wherfore hit was, Maystyr Geraud ne tellyth not / ne I ne can Francorum
not say; but many hey men he hade to consayl *and* to helpe, regem.
both of Englanđ *and* of beyonte see; many opynly *and* wel; multo
[more] falthyr pryuely. The olde kyng, the yongyr kynges fadyr, plures
for the fortvne that to hym was fal on euery syde so vnwyttyngly, occulte
was ful Sorroful. Neuer-the-las, by grete Sotylte *and* hey herte, habens, et
he made fayre semblante, *and* trystid to god; *and* on euery syde fautores.
that he myght, in al maner he besoght helpe. he sende messageres
into Irland, *and* made come ouer to hym the meste Parte of the
knyghtes *and* of the good mennye that he ther lefte. They come
to hym at the Cite of Ruem. *and* he be-thoght hym that hit was ad urbem
Peril to leue har londe vnkepte: ther he be-toke the Erle Richard; Rothoma-
al the londe to kepe, *and* sette to hym Reymonde as his othyr genssem.
hande; For the Erle forsok out *and* out, that he that kepyng custodiam
wolde not rescewe, but yf he hadde Reymond wyth hym, hym illam sus-
for to helpe. cipere
omnino
renuerat.

[CHAPTER XXXIII.]

The Erle *and* Reymond, *with* har men, wentyn Into Capitulum
Irland; *and*, for þe Pepil of Irland had herde of the grette xxxiiij^m.
stryfe that was betwene the kyng *and* his Sonnes be-yount the
See,—as Pepyl that stydfast is in vnstydfastnes, *and* lawfully ham gens sola
holde to vnlawfulnes,—the most Part of the Pryncis of the londe, constans
agayn har trouth y-founde, thay turned agayn the kyng. The incon-
Erle had spende the tresoure that he broght ouer wyth hym; *and* stantia.
whan the fellochipe lackid spendynge, *and* not Speddyn in Prayes-
takyng, Vndyr heruey, that was constabil ouer the menny, *and* deficien-
euer had envy to Reymond; Thay wenten ham to the Erle tibus
comynly by oone acorde, *and* sayde to hym wel, ‘but that he quoque
wolde sette Reymonde ouer ham, thay wolde lewe hym euerichone, stipendiis.
and wende Into Englande; othyr, that wel wors was, thay wolde
turne to har enemys agaynes hame’ / *And* as the menny desyrid,
Reymonde was sette ouer hame. thay take then herte to ham, in Offelanos
and wenten vp-on the Ofelany in the descses, *and* toke grette insur-
gentes.

A.D. 1173. & name grett prayes, arrayed ham nobly wyth hors & wepne.
 Lismore, From thens thay wentteñ to lysmore, & the cyte, & al þe contre
 &c., and about, robbeden & prayeden, & by the see wey senten many grete
 take much prayes to Watyrford; & of pylfre & thynges that thay namen, thay 4
 prey. fylled .xij. far costes that wereñ I-come fro Waterford yn-to the
 The hauen of dongaruame. As thay weř wynd abydynges, theř come
 English þe men of Cork from by west, by the see, yn xxxij shypmys, & many
 fleet fight a men theř-In, for to take thay other. Theř was the fyght styffely 8
 Cork fleet, I-yeuens, of these twey fletes yn the see: That oon assaylled that
 other grymlych *with* stones & *with* sparthes; the other wereñ
 welle I-wepned, & *with*-stode styffly *with* arblastes & *with* bowes.
 At þe end, thay of Corke weren descomfyted & ouer-come; heř 12
 rout it, and kills men, shypmys I-take; heř men I-slawe, & I-caste yn the see. Adam de
 and take their prizes herford & phylep de Wellsse, that weren I-sette ouer thay yong-
 to Water-lynges, *with* mo shyppes & grete beyetes of wepne & of pylfre, to
 ford. Watyrford wenten *with* grete yoye. Reymond herd speke of thys 16
 Reimund marches, fyght, & tythynges to hym come; he toke *with* hym xx^{ti} knyghtes
 & an hundreth bowmen, & went by the see wey thederward.
 Than come to hym tythynges þat dermot, þe prynce of desmond,
 was, *with* myche hostes, comen to lysmore, to helpe ham of Cork. 20
 Dermot daren't face him. Reymond went hym thederward. Þe prynce that herd, & turned
 ayeyne, & durst hym nat abyde. And Reymond went fortheř yn-to
 Reimund has 4,000 cattle. the contrey, robbed & prayed, so that he hadde *with* hym at hys
 [|| Fol. 17 a.] turny[n]ge aye toward Watyrford, four thousand kyne; & as thay 24
 The Irish take some. wer comynges || by narrow weyes wyth har praye, come the Ireshe-
 men of þe contray, & henten a party of har kyne, & wenten al
 quyttten *with* ham to wodde. þe crye arose, & Reymond¹ (as man
 that euer was formost redy) went aftyr, *with* oñ priuisant man an 28
 hors wyth hym; come to the woddes ense², theř the theues
 weren an hydynges. Whan he hadde I-faylled of þe preye, &
 wolde turne ayeyne, hys felewes folyly entyced hym for to wende
 yn-to þe wodde, & he so dydde. Whan thay weren wel *with*-yn, 32

¹ The Latin text gives this exploit to Meiler: Gir. Cambr. *Op.* v. 309-10, 'et in primis Meilerius, ut erat praeceps semper et probus, satellite quodam comitatus equestri, praedones usque ad silvae condensa est persecutus.'

² Ends.

Prayes arrayed ham nobely *with* hors and wepyñ. From thens A.D. 1173.
 thay wentyn to lysmore; * and the Cite and the contrey about, [*Fol. 15
 robbodyn *and* preedyn, *and*, By the See-wey, Sendyne many gret b.]
 prayis to waterford; and of pilfre *and* of thyngē that thay toke,
 thay fillid' xiiij^o. farcostes that weryn come from watyrford into naviculas
 the havyn of doum-garvan. As thay were wynde abydyngē ther, tredecim.
 come the men of Corke from be weste, by the See, in xxxij^{ti}. Shippis,
and many men therin, forto take the othyr. ther was the fyght bellicosus
 fressely yewyn of this two flittes in the See. That oone assaylid refertus
 the othyr grymly *with* stones and *with* Sparthis; the othyr wer viris.
 wel wepenyd, *and* wythstod styfly *with* arblastes *and* *with* bowes¹.
 At the Ende, thay of Corke weryn dyscomfyted and ouer-come;
 Her shippis take, her men slayne, *and* caste Into the See. Adam
 de herforde *and* Philippe² the wellsshe, that weryn sette ouer
 thay yonglynges, *with* mo shippes *and* gret begetes of wepyn cum armis
 and of Pylfre, to Watyrford wentyn *with* gret Ioy. Reymond et oneribus.
 herde speke of this fight, *and* tythynges to hym come: he toke
with hym xx^{ti}. knyghtes and an hundrid bowmen, *and* went by per mari-
 the see-way thedyrwarde. Than com to hym tythyngis that timam
 Dermot, the prince of desmonde, was *with* myche hostys comyn viam.
 to lysmore, to helpe ham of Corke. Reymonde wentyn hym
 thedyrward. the prince that herde, *and* turned agayn, *and* durst
 hym not abyde. And Reymonde wente Ferdyr Into the³ contrey,
 robbid *and* Prayed, So that he hadd *with* hym at his turnyngē
 agayn toward watyrford, iij^o. M^r. kyne. and as thay were comyngē
 by naroweis wyth har Pray, come the Iryssh-men of the contray, ad silvas
and tokyn a party of har kyne, *and* wentyn al quyte *with* ham to de plano.
 wodde. the cry aros, *and* Reymond, as man that euer was formyst
 redye, went aftyr, *with* one pryuisant man an hors *with* hym, come
 to the woddys syd ther the thewis were an-hydyngē. Whan he had
 falid of the pray, *and* wolde haue turne agayne, his fellowis solely juvene in-
 Enticed hym forto wende into the wodd; *and* he so dide. Whan stigante
temerario

¹ dum isti lapidibus et securis acriter impetunt, illi vero, tam sagittis quam laminis ferreis quibus abundabant, promptissime resistunt.—Op. v. 309.

² Philippe, MS.

³ the the, MS.

A.D. 1173-4. Reinmund is attackt, but cuts his way thro' his focs.

the Irysshe-men rysse to ham on euery halue, & leyd ham oīd, & anoōd-ryght the yonge mañ was al to-hakked to-for hym; he yarne to snellych for to socuē hym, & was assaylled oīd euery halue; & he, as man, hent out the swerd & leyd on about hym, & smot of that mañ the hond, þat other the arme, þe þryd the heede by þe sholdres; thus he opened hym the wey, & come out to hys men, & broght twey sparthes fast on hys sheld, & thre on hys hors¹; bot all hool & sound, & harmeles of body, he escaped. 8

[CHAPTER XXXIV.]

A.D. 1174.

Reimund goes to Wales. Hervey is made Constable.

Donnell O'Brien slaughters the Dublin men.

The Irish massacre the English.

Whan thys was y-done, & the meygne was noblych arrayed both byl ond & eke by watyē, come tythynges to Reymond, that hys fadyē Wylliam fytz Geraud was dede. Reymond went ouere yn-to Walys, to take seysyne yn hys fadyē¹² landys; & heruy was the whyle eft² y-made conestable of þe meygne: he wold fayne entremette hym to do some thyng the whyle that Reymond was out of londe, & made the Erl & the meyne wend to Cassell for to weren yn Monestre; he sent eke¹⁶ after the meyne of dyuelyn to come to ham. And as thay come through Ossery, & laye a nyght yn a place thaē thay supposed to be al sykeē, Obreen, the kyng of thomone, was sykeē, & awayted haē comynge by good spies. he aroos with mych folk vpon hem²⁰ erly a day yn the morowenynge, & smot vpon ham vnwytyngly, & slogh fouē knyghtes that wereīd ouer ham, & fouē hundred ostmen. Whan the tythynges heē-of come to the Erl, he turned ayeine to Waterford with mych shame, & held hym thaē as man²⁴ that was beseget, that he cam nat fro thennes. And for thys aduentuē, the folk of Irland wyth oo hert al to-gyddre aresen vpon the englysshe, & slow ham yn-to al theē thay myght ham fynd. The kyng of Connaght come eke ouer the shynen yn-to Myd,²⁸ & fond al þe castels wast & voyde; he brant & keste ham adoun to ground, tyl he come ryght to dyuelyn. The Erl saw þat he was narrow by-ladde: by consaylle of hys men, as the last remedy of lyue, he sent hys lettres to Reymond ouer yn-to Walys, yn these³²

¹ tres secures Hibernicas in equo confixas, duasque in clipeo portans.—Gir. Camb. Op. v. 310.

² MS. est.

they wer with-In the Irysh-men ryssed to ham on euery halue *and* leyde on ham, *and* anoone the yonge man was al to-hackid to-for hym. He rane forto socoure hym, *and* was assaylid on euery syde. And he, as man, toke out his Swerde, *and* leyde on aboute hym, *and* Smote of, that man the honde, that othyr the harme, the thyrde the hede by the sholdris; thus he oppenyd the wey, *and* come out to his men, and broght two Spares faste on his shelde, and thre on his hors; but al holde and Sounde *and* harmeles of body he Escapid.

A.D.
1173-4.*exserto
gladio,
viam sibi
vir ani-
mosus viri-
bus ape-
ruit.*

[CHAPTER XXXIV.]

A.D. 1174.

Whan this was done, *and* the meyne was nobely arrayed both by londe *and* also by watyr / come thythyngis to Reymonde, that his Fadyr willam fiz-geraude was dede. Reymond wente ouer into Walis, to take seysyne in his Fadyr landis; And heruey that tyme was made constabil of the meny. he wolde fayn entremitte hym to done sumthyng, the whyle that Reymonde was out of londe; *and* made the Erle *and* meny wende to cassell forto werryn in monestre. He sende also aftyr the meny of deuelyn to come to ham. And As thay come throgh Ossory, *and* lay a-nyght in a place thar thay demyd to be al Sure, Obreen, the kyng of Thomonde, was Sure, *and* awayted hare * comynge By good Spies. He aroose, with mych Pepil, vpon Hame, erly a day in the mornynge, *and* Smote vpon ham vn-wittyngly, *and* killid iiij^o. knyghtis *and* weryn ouer hame, *and* CCCC men. Whan the thythynges herof come to the Erle, he turned agayne to Watyrford with mych shame, *and* helde hym ther as man that was besegid, that he came not fro thennes. And for this aduenture, the Pepil of Irland with oo herte al-to-giddy arysen vpon the Englysh, *and* Slowen ham in al places that thay ham myght fynde // The kyng of Connaght come also ouer the shynnyfi into Myth, *and* found al the Castelis waste *and* woysde. he braunt *and* keste ham doune to grounde, til he come ryght to Deuelyn. The Erle Saw that he was narrow bylad: by consail of his men, as the laste remedy of lyue, he sende his lettres to Reymond, ouer into Walis, in thes wordis: "As rath as

Capitulum
xxxiiiiij^m.*aliquid
agere
videretur.*[* Fol. 16
a.]*qui aliis
praecerant.**unanimiter
insurgunt.**in arcto
jam posi-
tum.*

A.D. 1174. Striguil asks Reimund's help, and promises him his sister Basile. wordes: "As rathe as thou hast I-sey these *lettres*, ne leue nat to come to *socour* vs wyth good myght: & thy desyr of basyle, my sustre, lawfully for to spouse, anone at þy comynge, wythout faylle thou shalt haue." Whan Reymond hadde thys I-herd, both for the 4 maydnes loue þat he so longe hadde desyred, & for to *proue* hys stalwardnesse, & *socour* hys lord yn hys mychele nede, wyth Meyleŕ, hys emes sone, he dyght hym al þat he myght yn such hast, so that he hadde thretty || knyghtes of hys owne kyn, & thre hundred 8 bowmen, the choyse of al Wales: he put hym to saylle, & arryued at Weysford yn fyftene shyppes. That same tyme, the men of Weysford hadden I-*purueyed* ham to vndo al þe englysshe, wheŕ-so me myght ham fynde. Whan thay sawe the shyppes comynge yn þe hauyŕ, & 12 baneres that thay wel knowe; þroght þat comynge so fersly, that traysonð was y-lefte; & anoonð Reymond went wyth hys men to Waterford, & broght thens the Erl stalwarthly to Weysford. 16 ffresel, that was kepeŕ of Waterford, went after the Erl by þe water of Sur, yn botys *with* hys men; &, as þay weŕ yn the watyŕ, the lydder gyddes that hym shold lode¹, slowe hy[m] & al hys men, & turned ayeyne to the Cyte, & gadered ham to-gedder al þe Irysshe-men, & smyt vponð þe englesshe, & slowe al that thay 20 myght fynd yn hous & yn wey, men & wommen, yonge & old, without any sparynge, saue thay that escaped yn-to Rathe-vyldestouŕ; & through ham was the toun I-saued, tyl the traytours þer-after come to pees, & euer ther-after the lasse beleued & loued. 24 Reymond, whan he hadde thys I-se[u]yd the Erl, he miniyed the Erl of hys beheste. The Erl sent anoonð to dyuelyŕn aftyr hys susteŕ, and went neuer from Weysford, fort sho was *with* mych wyrshyppe I-spoused to Reymond. Whan he was I-spoused, & 28 al þe day was Ihold yn yoy, gladnesse, & mych plente of mete & drynke, & the nyght aftyr, yn delytes of chambre as ham beste lyked, came tythynges that Oconghouŕ, kyng of Connaght, hadde I-destrued al myght, & was I-come wyth myche power 32 yn-to the contrey of dyuelyŕn. Reymond was nat slowe, nether foŕ loue of hys fayŕ wyf ne for the moche feste, bot anoonð a morowe he toke hys meŕn wyth hym, & went toward dyuelyŕn.

¹ for lede.

ye haue sey thes *lettres*, ne lette not to come to socoure vs with A.D. 1174.
 good myght: *and* youre desyre of Basyle my Sustre, lawefully forto et deside-
 Spouse, anone at youre comynge, with-out fayl ye shall haue" // rium tuum,
 Whan Reymond hadd this herde, both for the maydes lowe that he in Basilia
 so longe had desiryd, *and* forto prow his myght, *and* socoure his sorore mea
 lorde in his mychel nede, with Meyler, his emys sone, he dight hym tibi
 al that he myght in such haste, so that he myght haue / *and* legitime
 hadde xxx^{ti}. knyghtes of his owyn kyne, *and* CCC bowmen, the coyse copulanda.
 of al Walis. he putte hym to sayle, *and* arryued at Weysforde in de electa
 xv. shippis. that same tyme, þ^e men of Weysforde hadd Purveyed Kanbriae
 ham to vndo al the Englysh, wherso thay myght ham fynde. jucvolute.
 Whan thay Saue the chippis comynge Into hawyn, and baneres
 that thay wel knew; throw that comynge So Fresly, that trayson adventu
 was lefte; and anoone Reymonde went wyth his men to watyrforde, tam subito.
and broght thens the erle boldely to Weysforde. Fresell, that was Fretellus,
 keper of watyrforde, wente by the watyr of Sure in botis with his custos.
 men; and, as they were in the watyr, the liddy gides that hym ab iniquis
 Sholde lede, slayne hym *and* al his men, *and* turned agayn to the Oetmannis.
 Cite, *and* gaddrid ham to-geddyr al the Irysh-men, *and* smyte
 vpon the Englysh-men, *and* slayne al thay that thay myght fynde
 in hous, in wey, men *and* women, yonge *and* olde, with-out any in plateis
 sparynge, Saue thay that Escapid into Rathevyldestoure; *and* et domibus.
 through ham was the touffe Sawid, tyl the traytorys ther-aftyr
 come to Pees, *and* euer ther-aftyr the^e lasse belewid *and* lowid. /
 Reymond, when he hadd thus I-Sawid the Erle, he mvnyed the
 Erle of his promes. the erle sende anoone to deuelyn aftyr his revocatam
 suster; *and* Wente neuer frome Weysforde till that she was, with a Dublinia
 mycho wyrchipp, Spousid to Reymonde. Whan he was spousid, Basiliam,
 and al the day was holde in Ioy *and* gladnys, *and* mych Plente
 of mette and drynke, and the nyght aftyr in delytes of chambyr, in thalami
 as ham beste plesyde / Came thyngis that o-conghoure, kyng of deliciis
 Connaght, hadd destrued al Myth, *and* was come with grete hoste nocte con-
 into the contrey of Deuelyn. Reymond was not Slow, nethyr for sumpta.
 lowe of his fayre wyffe, ne * for the moche feste; But amorrow He rec vino,
 toke His men With Hym, *and* Went towarde Deuelyn. O-con- rec venere,
retardatur.
*Fol. 16
b.]

A.D. 1174. Oconghouŕ hadde *per-to-forne* assayed hys mayne, y-douted hym
 O'Conor the more; he ne abode nat wyth hym, bot was gladde to take
 retires. homward. Reymund let restore & arere that was destrued througħ
 Reimund rebuilds his Castles and restores peace. he werŕ, & fale castels ryght vp, & broght yn-to rather state; 4
 & for dred of hym, the lond wax yn good pees a good whyle, that
 none Iresshe-maṅ ne durst hym styrrre, wer to begynne.

[CHAPTER XXXV.]

A.D. 1173-4. **T**his while the kynge was yn mych stryf, wel two yer,
 Henry II ayeyṅ hys thre sonnes & haŕ allies, both yn englande 8
 livd in strife. & yn normandy & garioigne; & so was I-peyned *with* trauaylle
 yn wepne & wakyngē nyght & day, that no man ne myght more.
 Bot, for ne wors fomanne may be, þaṅ thay that maṅ moste
 The worst was, that his trusted Body-guard deserted to his rebel sons. trusteth to, o thyngē was, that meste tene hym dydde: that þe 12
 knyghtes that he hadde I-chose, hys body to kepe, yn whose
 hondes hys lyf & hys deth he be-taght, for the moste dele euery
 nyght wenten to hys sones pryuely; so that, whan the kynge
 oft-tymes asked aftyŕ ham, thay war nat I-founde. Natheles, the 16
 bataylle that was of so dotous begynnyge, hadde so good endyngē
 that, for the vnryght that hys sonnes hym dedde so vnk[i]ndely,
 But he won all fights, hyt semete better tha[t] he soght by power of god, than by erthly
 power; ffor yn al places, the *ouerhand* was hys. And as hyt semete 20
 fyrste that hyt was for wreth of seyñth Thomas-es deth that þat
 vnhape hym || betydde, Also hyt semed *per-aftyŕ*, Whan he
 hadde I-done asseth to holy chyrche, & pees made wyth the
 holy martyr, wyth teres & repentaunce of herte, al hys tene, 24
 throught goodys helpe, hym turned to gladnesse: ffor aftyŕ the
 mych tene & traysoṅ þat he hadde Itholled al two yer, at þe
 laste was þe bataylle I-smyttenṅ, at the whych, between the twey
 ostes, Ther war the kynges sonnes dyscomfyt, þrogh Rauf de 28
 Glanuyl, that was mayster of þe kynges hoste. Ther was I-take
 þe kynge of scotland, & þe erl of shestre, & þe erl of leycestre,
 & so fele gret men, bothe of england & of beyent see, that vnnethe
 me fond prisons to ham. Ther, aftyŕ al þe trauayl þat þe kynge 32
 hadde, & þe enuy, & þe costes al two yer, come þe sonnes to þe
 fadyres pees, & maden asseth, falsly, as hyt was *per-aftyŕ* wel
 Ishewed yn deede. Of þus vntrowth, spake Merlyn yn hys

ghoure had thertofoꝛ assayed his meny, *and* douted hym the more. A.D. 1174.
 he wolde not abyde hym, but was glade to take homwarde. *et castris
 Mediae . . .*
 Reymonde lette restore and arere that was destrued by the werre; *dirutis . . .*
 And fale casteles ryght vpe, and broght into radyr state. *and* for *jam repa-
 ratis et in
 statum
 redactis.*
 dred of hym, the londe wax in good pees a goode whyle, that none
 Irysh-man ne durst hym not styre, werre to begynne.

[CHAPTER XXXV.]

A. D.

1173-4.

This whyle the kyng was in myche stryfe, wel two yere,
 agayn his Sonnes *and* har allience, both in Englande and in *Capitulum
 XXXV^m.*
 Normandy, *and* gascoygne; *and* So was peyned with trawail in
 wepyn, nyght and day, that no man ne myght more. But, for no
 wors enemy may none be, than thay that a man trusteth moste to,
 O thyng was, that most angyr hym didd: that the knyghtes that he *illi quoque
 quos cu-
 bicularios
 sibi milites
 elegerat.*
 hadd chose his body to kepe, in Whos handis his lyfe and his deth
 he betoke, for the mor Party, euery nyght wentyn to his Sones
 priuely; So that, whan the kyng ofte-tymys askyd aftyr hame, thay
 were not founde. Natheles, the battayll that was of So doutos
 begynnynge, hadd So good Endynge that, for the vnryght that his
 Sones hym didde so vnkyndely, hit Semyd bettyr that he focht by
 Powere of god, than by Erthely Powere. For in al Placys, the ouer-
 hande was his. And as hit Semyd fryst, that hit was for wrethe of
 Seynte Thomas-es deth that that vnhape hym befell, Also hit
 semyd ther-aftyr, whan he hadd done asseth to holy church, *and*
 pees made with the hooly martyr, with terys and repentaunce of *propiti-
 ante nobili
 martyre
 Thoma,
 lacrimis et
 deuotione
 jam pla-
 cato.*
 herte, al his tene (by godys helpe) hym turned to gladnys. For
 aftyr the mych tene and trayson that he hadd sufferid al two yere,
 At the laste, was the battayll Smytten, at the whyche, be-twen the
 two hostys, Ther were the kynges Sonnes dyscomfyte, by Ralfe de
 Glanvil, that was Maystyr of the kynges hoste. Ther was take
 the kyng of Scotlande, and the Erle of Chestre, and the Erle of
 leycestre, and So many grete men, both of England *and* of beyonte
 See, that vnneth thay found prisonys to ham. Ther, aftyr al the
 trauail that the kyng hadde, and the Envy, and the costys al two *umbrati-
 que magis
 quam vera
 concordia.*
 yere, come the Sonnes to the faderis Pees, *and* madyn asseth, falsly,
 as hit was ther-aftyr wel Shewid in dede. Of this vntrouth, Spake

Merlin of
Celidon's
prophecy of
the Rebel-
lion of
Henry II's
sons.

prophecies, & seyde: "The sonnes shullen agylte ayeyn þe fadyr
for hys gyltes, & the rather gylte shal be enchesoð of þe gyltes
þat after shullen comen. The sonnes shullen aryse vpon þe fadyr;
& for to awreke hys felonye ayeyne þe wombe, the tharmes shal
swer ham togydde. In the man of blode, the blode shall aryse,
& wanhoply shal hys pynsyng be, tyl that scotland þe penaunce
of hys pylgrymage bewepe."

[CHAPTER XXXVI.]

Henry II
had grey
eyes, a red
face,

and a big
belly,
tho, to
lessen it,
he'd hardly
rest his
body. All
day he was
out hunt-
ing, and
rode a high
trotter;

at night he
stood.

When once
he'd seen a
man, he
knew him
again.

The kyng henry the other, was¹ a mañ saunrede, rounde
heed, & round grey egheñ; roghly lokyng, & rede yn wreth;
vysage rede bernynge, grete speche, neke somdel logh of þe
sholdres, brest thyk, armes staluarthe, of flesshy body; & more
of kynde than of glotony, grete of wombe; for he was, as to prynce
belongeth, [of] mete, & of drynke ful meen & for-berynge²; & for
to a-quenche that gretnesse, he put hymself to ful mych trauaylle,
that wnneth he lete hys body haue eny reste, ether by day other
by nyght; ffor, wynter, & somer, he arose euer more yn the dawn-
ynge, & herd fyrst hys seruyce of holy chyrch; ther-aftyr, most
what al þe day he wold ben out, other wyth houndes other wyth
hawkes, for yn thay two thynges he delyted hym swyth mych
wythal; & vnnethe he wold ryde any amblyng hors, bot myche
trottyng hors, for to trauaylle hys body the more. Aftyr al hys
trauaylle a-day, vnnethe he lete hys body haue a lytell reste for to
syte to hys mete the whyle that he eete; & anoon aftyr mete,
& namely aftyr sopper, anoon he wold aryse & stonde, & so dryue
forth al þe meste parte of the nyght, so that al þe court was
oft ennyede ther-of. þe man that he ones yn lych beheld, euer eft
he hadde knowleche of hym; &, dyng þat he hadde ones herd,
euer eft he hyt wold vnderstond; þe man that he ones hated,
vnnethe he wold euer eft³ loue; & man that he ones loued, vnneth

¹ vir subrufus, caesius (= lentiginosus), amplo capite et rotundo, oculis glaucis, ad iram torvis, et rubore suffusus, facie ignea, voce quassa, collo ab humeris aliquantulum demisso . . . corpore carnosus, et naturae magis quam gulae vitio, citra tumorem enormem et torporem onnem, moderata quadam immoderantia ventre praeamplo. Gir. Cambr. *Op.* v. 302.

² Erat enim cibo potuque modestus ac sobrius; et parcimoniae, quoad principii licuit, per omnia datus. Gir. Cambr. *Op.* v. 302. ³ MS. est.

merlynge in his prophesies, and Sayde : “ The Sonnes shullyn agylte agayn the Fadyr for his gyltes ; and the radyr gylte shall be encheyson of the gyltes that aftyr shullyn come. The Sones shall aryse vpon the fadyr ; and forto aw[r]eke his felony agayne the wombe, the tharmes shal Swere ham to-giddyr. In the man of blode, the blode shal aryse ; and wanhoply shal his Pynsyng be¹, til that Scotland the Penance of his Pylgrimage bewepe. ’

*et ob scel-
ris vindic-
tum in
ventrem
viscera con-
jurabunt.*

[CHAPTER XXXVI.]

The kyng henry tho othyr, was a man same rede, roun- *Capitulum*
hede, and rounde grey eyyn ; row lokyng, and rede in wreth ; *xxxvj^m.*
Visage rede, brennyng ; * grete Speche ; neke somdel shorte of the *Descriptio*
Soldrys, breste thyke, of fleschy Body ; ande, more of kynde, than of *Henrici*
glotony, gret of wombe ; for he was, as to prynce belongyth, of *regis tercij.*
mete and of drynke ful meen and for-beryng ; and forto aquenche *[*Fol. 17*
that gretnes, he put hym-Selfe to ful mych trauayl,² that vnneth he *a.]*
lette his body haue enny reste, othyr by day othyr by nyght. For *immo-*
Wyntyr and Somer, he aros euer-more in the dawyng, and herde *derata*
fryst his *seruyce* of holy church ; theraftyr, most part al the day he *corpus*
wolde be out, othyr *with* houndys or *with* haukes ; for in thay two *veratione*
thyngys he delyted gretly *with-al / and* vnneth he wolde ryde any *torquebat.*
hamlyng hors, but mych trottyng hors, for to trauail his body the
more. Aftyr al his trauayl a-daye, vnneth he lette his body haue
a lytil reste forto sitte to his mette. the whyle that he ette, and
anoone aftyr mette, and namely aftyr soper, anoone he wolde arysse
and stonde², and So dryue forth al the moste Parte of the nyght, So
that al the courte was ofte wery of his wakyng. the man that he
onys in lyche be-helde, euer he hadd knowlege of hym ; and thyng
that he hadd ones herde, euer aftyr he wolde hit vnderstonde.
the man that he onys hattyd, vnneth he wolde euer aftyr loue ; and
man that he onys lowyd, vnneth he wolde euer aftyr hate. When

*totam
statione
continua
curiam
lassare
consue-
verat.*

¹ et desperabilis fiet afflicto.—*Op.* v. 301.

²⁻² sibi nec pacem ullam nec requiem indulgebat. Venationi namque trans modestiam deditus, summo diluculo equo cursore transvectus, nunc saltus lustrans, nunc silvas penetrans, nunc montium juga transcendens, dies ducebat inquietos : vespere vero domi receptum, vel ante coenam vel post, rarissime sedentem conspexeris.—*Op.* v. 302.

Henry II described.

He lov'd meekness, and hated pride.

he wold euer eft hate. Whan any vnhappes hym befelle, noman meker ; efte whan he was yn sekernesse, no man sterner̄. Suert ayeyn the bold, meke wyth ham that wereñ vnder y-brought, hard amonge hys owne, & priuely large amonge vnkouth ; & openly 4 mekenesse & debonerte he louede ; pryde & hauteynesse he hated, & wold brynge vnder fote.

A.D.

1174-5.

Henry II does not forget his Ireland.

[*Fol. 18 b.]

He gets a grant from the Pope, of the Lordship of Ireland, and a charge to reform the folk to the laws of the Church,

No[ta] teno[rem] bullee [A]drian.

to withstand sin, and better bad doings.

[CHAPTER XXXVII.]

Thegh̄ þe kyngē wer wel longe yn grete nuy & grete anguyshe throught hys sonnes, as hyt ys to-fore I-told, 8 natheles, amonge otheṛ nedes, he ne foryet nat hys Irland. He lete take the *lettres* that waṛ Imade yn the consaylle of Casshele, of the vnclene lyf & the horyble synnes that the folk of Irland lyueden In, || other-wyse than crysten men oght lyuen ; & the 12 *lettres*, al ensealed as thay wer, he sent by hys messagers to the Court of Rome, to the pope Alyxsander̄ that than was ; & thaṛ he dydde the *purchase*, that by auctoryte of the pope, & by hys concent, was to hym I-graunted the lordshype of the lond ; & þe 16 lond-folke, that crysten shold be, & al clene was out of ryght reule of crystendome & ryght byleue, to brynged̄ yñ-to ryght lawe of holy chyrch, yn the manere of England. That pryuelege forth, wyth another̄, that rather was *purchased* of þe pope Adrian, 20 that was to-fore Alexander, was I-sent ouer yn-to Irlande by Nychole, pryouṛ of Walyngford, & Wyllyam Aldelines sone ; & was a consaylle of al the clergye of Irland I-gaddered to-gyddre at Waterford : theṛ weṛ the pryueleges I-shewed & I-radde 24 solempnelych to-fore ham, & I-graunted heghlygh by consentement of al the comynes. The forme of thay *preuylesges*, as thay wer endyted yn the Court of Rome a latyne, ne myght I nat comly setten yn Englyshe, & perfor I hyt leue ; bot the meste 28 streynth ys thys :—Whan the pope Adryan hadde herd opynly the euyle lyf, & þe synfule, that þe folk of Irland ladden, wors than wyld bestes, & out of constytucions of holy chyrch & ryght byleue, he *graunted* the kyngē that he shold ynto Irland wend, for to 32 adresse & sprede þe *termes* of holy chyrch, for to wythstond & lete the ruynē of syn, for to Amend the lyther thewes, & sette þe good,

any unhappis hym be-felle no mane mekyr. Whan he was in sickyrns, no man sternyr. Smyrte agayn the bolde, meke wyth ham that weryn vudyr-broght; harde amonge his owyn, ande Pryuely large amonge strange men; and opynly mekyns and debonerte he lowyd; Pryde and hauteynesse he hatyd, and wolde brynge vndyr-fete.

clemens in subactos.

diffusus in extraneos.

[CHAPTER XXXVII.]

A.D.
1174-5.

Thegh the kynge were wel longe in gret angwysche throug
his sonnes, as hit is to-fore tolde, natheles, amonge othyr nedys, he foryate note his Irlande. he take the letteres that ware made in the Consayl of Cassell, of the vnclene lyfe and the horribil Synnys that the Pepil of Irland lyuedyn In / In othyr wyse than crystyn men oght lyue; and the *lettres*, al Ensealid̄ as thay were, He sende his messagers to the Courte of Rome, to the Pope Alysandyr that than was, and thar he did Purchase that, by auctorite of the Pope and by his concent, was to hym grauntyd the lorchippe of the londe, and the londe-Pepill that crystyn shold be, and al clene was out of Ryght rule of crystyndome and ryght belewe, to brynge into ryght lawe of holy church, in the maner of England. That pryvylege forth, with an othyr¹ that radyr was Purchasid of the Pope Adriane, that was to-fore Alexandyr, was sende ouer Into Irlande by Nycole, pryoure of Walyngeforde, and Willam Aldelines-sonne; and was a consayle of al the clergy of Irland y-gadderid to-giddyr at Watyrford. ther wer the pryuy-legis y-shewyd, and y-radd Sollempnelych to-fore ham, and grauntyd hyghlych of al the comynys. The fourme of thay Pryuylegis, as thay wer endyted At Rome a-latyne, y may not comly sette in Englysh, and therfor y* Hit Leue; But the mest streynth is this: [*Fol. 17 b.] Whan the Pope Adryan Hadd Herde opynly the evyl lyfe, and the synfull, that the Pepell of Irland laddyn, wors than wilde bestis, and out of constituciones of holy church and ryght be-lewe, he graunted the kynge, that he sholde into Irland wende, forto adresse and sprede the termys of holy church, forto wythstonde and lete the ruene of synne², forto a-mende the wickid dedis, and sette the good; forto En[e]che religion of crystyndome, So that hit were

Capitulum xxxvijm.

suae tamen inter agendum Hiberniae non immer memor.

ab Alexandro tertio, tunc praesidente, privilegium impetravit.

quod idem rex ab Adriano... perquisierat.

in publica audientia ejusdem privilegii, cum universitatis assensu solemniter recitatae facta fuit.

Nota tenorem bulle Adriane.

et vitiorum plantaria inde extirpanda.

A.D.
1174-5.
But every
house in
Ireland is
to pay the
Pope *id.* a
year.

All oppo-
nents are to
go to the
Devil.

A.D. 1174.

Now again
for our
Knights'
deeds in
Ireland.
Hervey of
Mont-
maurice,
jealous of
Reimund,

marries
Nesta
Fitz-
Gerald.

O'Brien,
King of
Limerick,
rebels.

for to eneche relygyoun of crystendome, so that hyt war wyrshype to god, & helte to the soules; & the folke of þe lond, manshyply hym shold vptake, & worthy as lorde; saue ryghtes of holy chyrche vnwemmed; & to seynt petyr & þe holy modyr chyrche of Rome, of 4
euery hous a pany to rent, a yer, yn Irland, as yn England. Thys pryuelege was I-purchased of þe pope Adryan; & a clerk hyt purchased, that hette¹ Ithōn of Salusbury; & the pope, by the same clerk, sent to the kyng a gulden ryng, yn name of Seysyne 8
of the lond. the pope Alexandre next aftyr hym confermed that same yift; & euery eþer of ham amonested & parted from god almyghty, & betheght þe deuyl al ham that yn any tyme þer-
ayeyne wold come. 12

[CHAPTER XXXVIII.]

Off þe kyng And of hys sonnes, & of the purchase that þe kyng dede, ys Inowe Itold shortlyche: now we wyllen turne ayeyne to ouþ knyghten gestes yn Irlande. The lond of Irland was yn good pees vnder Reymond-ys kepyng; bot 16
heruy of Mountynorthy,—that euer hadde enuy to Reymond, & saw that hys selth & hys wyrshype wex euer more & more,—fore he ne durst nat openly shoue the felony that was yn hys hert, he bethoght that he wold dernely; he made hym semblant of myche 20
loue; besoght ful yorne þat he most allyaunce haue to har kynrede, & namely, that he moste haue to wyue a gentyl-wommañ, Moryces doghter, fytz Gereud, that hegh Neste. Thys mayd was hym Igraunted, & he hyr spoused; & þat þe kynrede sholden the 24
fasteþ be Ibound togydyr, by procuryng of Reymond & of hym eke, þe Erl yaf helyn, hys sustre, to Wylyyam, Moryces eldest sone: þe erl sent eke aftyr Moryce, that was than Iwent ynto Walys; & at hys comyng, he yaue hym þe haluendele of Ofelañ, & þe 28
castel of wykynlo; & þat oþer haluendele he yaue Meyler. In the tyme þat þe pees was, & þe lond yn good state, byfel that Obren, the kyng of Thomon, ayeyne hys trowth & ayeyn the kynges pees, began to withdrawen hym from the kyng, & nocht nold be 32
bowyng to hym, ne to ham that weþ vnder hym yn þe lond.

¹ MS. 'sette' for 'hight, hette, or hete,' p. 94, l. 22 below: 'per Johannem Salesberiensem,' v. 316.

vyrchipp to god, *and* helth to the Sowlys ; *and* the Pepil of the londe, manshibly hym sholde vp-take, *and* worthy as lorde ; Saue the ryght of holy church vnwemyd ; *and* to seynt Petyr *and* the holy modyr church of Rome, of euery hous a peny to rent, a yere, in Irland as in England. This pryuylege was Purchasyd of the Pope Adrian. / *And* a clerke hit Purchasid that was callid Ihon of Salysbury ; *and* the Pope, by the Same clerke, Sende to the kyng a golde ryng, in tokyn of Seysyn of the londe. *And* the Pope Alexandyr nexte aftyr hym confermyt that Same yfte ; *And* euery othyr of ham amonessed *and* Partid from god almyghty, *and* betoke the deuyl al ham that in any tyme ther-ayeynnes wolde come.

A.D.
1174-5.

*salva beato
Petro, et
sacro-
sanctae
Romanae
ecclesiae,
sicut in
Anglia sic
et in Hiber-
nia, de
singulis
domibus
annua
unius
denarii
pensione.*

[CHAPTER XXXVIII.]

A.D. 1174.

Off the kyng and of his sonnes, and of the Purchas that the kyng did, is y-now tolde Sortelych. Now we will turne agayne to oure knyghten gestis in Irland // The londe in Irland was in good pees vndyr Reymonde-is keypyng ; but heruey of montmorthy,—that euer hadd envy to Reymonde, and Saw that his goodnes and his wyrchippe [wex] euer more and more,—for he ne drust not opynly show the felony that was in his herte, he be-thoght that he wolde Pryuely / he made to hym semblant of mych loue ; be-sogh[t] gretly that he sholde alyauce haue to har kynryde, and namely, that he haue to wyue a gentyl woman, Morices doghtyr, fitz-geraude, that was callid Neste. This mayde was to hym graunted, and he hyr Spoused. *and* that the kynred sholde be fastyr bounde to-giddy, by procuryng of Reymonde *and* of hym also, the Erle yaue Ellyn his sustyr, to Willam, Morices Eldyst Sone. the Erle sende also aftyr Moryce, that was than went into walis ; *and* at his comyng, he yaue halfe to hym of Ofelan, and the castel of wickylow ; *and* the othyr halfe he yaue to Meyler. In the tyme that the Pees was, and the londe in good state, besel that Obreen, the kyng of Thomonde, agayn his trouth *and* the kynges Pees, began to wyth-drawe hym frome the kyng, *and* wolde not be bowyng to hym, nethyr to ham that wer vndyr hym in the londe.

Capitulum
xxxviii^m.

*Vilens . .
ejusque
successus
de die in
diem am-
plius pros-
perari.*

*Nota
matrimo-
nium inter
Herueium
contrahi et
Nestam
filiam
Maurici
fitz-geraud.*

*medium
Ophelianie
cantare-
dum . . .
cum Wi-
kingelo-
nensi
castro.*

[Fol. 19
a.]

A.D. 1175.

Reimund
marches to
Limerick ;
but is
stopt by
the Shan-
non.His
nephew,
Davy the
Welshmanswims the
river
aslant ;but as only
one knight
follows
him, he
swims
back.Meiler
thencrosses the
Shannon.

Reymond told *per*-of myche vnworthynes, & yn lytyl whyle gadered to-dedderes [*so*] hys hoste, so that he hadde an hundred knyghtes & .xx.ti, thre hundred other an hois, & .cccc. bowmen afote, & about al-halwen-tyde went toward lymeryke. Whan thay wer theder 4
I-come, thay hadde grete lette of the grete watyr of þe shynen, that was betwen ham & þe sytè, so that thay myght nat ouer wende : the yonglynges—that wel coueytouse wer ham self to auaunce, her stalwarthnesse to showe, & also wynnyng to gete & to 8
hawe,—weren wel sore a-tened þat thay myght nat ouer to þe syte that was ham so neght, for þe watyr þat was so depe & so streit rennyng betwene, & eke so stony by the ground. As the formest of ham waren houngge vpon þe waterys brynk, was a yonge 12
knyght amonge ham, newly I-dobbet, fayr & stalwa[r]th, Reymondes Neuowe, that hete Dauy the Welsse¹ : throgħ grete couetyse that he hadde, ouer al otheṛ to wyn the formest pryce, ne dredet nat to do hym-self to so horyble perylle of deth ; he smote hys hors with 16
the spores, & ouer-threwe adoun ynto þe watyr, þat was so depe & so stony. the horse was myche & stronge, & come sone vp aboute the watyr wyth hym. he wyssed the hors sydlyngge ayeins the watyr asquynt, & come ouer on the otheṛ syde, & cryed to hys 20
men, & seyde that he hadde a ford I-found. bot, for he fond no man þat hym wold felowe, bot o knyght that hete Geffrey Iudas², he turned ayeine by that same wey, & þe knyght with hym. he come ouer hole & sound ; bot þe knyght, progħ þe streyntnesse of þe 24
watyr, was I-throw adoun, he & hys hors, & y-drent to-for ham al. Whan Meyleṛ, that theder was wyth Reymond I-comen, þys saw, he hadde grete enuy that such hardynesse shold be I-teld of any other, & nat to hym : vpon the hors þat hym baṛ, he put himself 28
yn the watyr, & hardylyche, wyth-outten any ferdnesse, passed ouer þe other syde. The cytzeyns sawe hym comyng so al-oon ; thay comen ayein hym, some for to kepe hym vpward at hys comyng out of þe watyr, for to mak hym turne ayeine ; otheṛ, to vndo hym 32
ryght yn the watyr. The knyght was stalwarth, & boldly putte hym vp bytwene twe perylle :—on on halue, þe wode-yernyng

¹ David agnomine Walensis. *Op.* v. 321.² Galfridus Judas. *Ibid.*

Reymonde tolde therof gret vnworthynys, *and* in lytyll whyle A.D. 1175.
 gaddrid to-gidderis his hoste, So that he hadd an hundred knyghtes civica
and xx^{ti}, thre hundrid o^{per} an hors, and CCCC bowmen afoote; and kalendas
 aboute al-halwyn-tyde wentyn toward lymerike. whan thay wer Octobris.
 thedyr come, thay hadd gret lette of * the watyr of the Shynnyñ, [*Fol. 18
 that Was Betwen Ham and the Cite, So that thay myght not ouer- a.]
 wende. the yonglynges—that wel couetos were ham-sel^{se} to juventus,
 auau^{nce}, har myght to show, and also wynnynge to gette *and* to tam luci
 haue,—wer sore greuyd that thay myght not ouer to the cite that quam
 was ham so nyghe, for the watyr that was to depe, and so Streyte laudis
 rynnynge betwen, *and* also so stony by the grounde. As the cupula,
 fryste of ham was abydyngge vpon the watyres brynke, was tanquam
 a knyght amonge ham newly dobbid, fayre *and* stalwarth, Rey- ad aquas
 mondes Eme, that was callid Da^{uy} the Welsse: throug gret Tantali
 couetyse that he hadd, ouer al othyr to wyn the formyste price, he posita.
 dreddit not to do hym-Sel^{se} to so horribill Perel of deth. he horren-
 smote his hors with the Sporis, *and* ouer-threw adou^{ne} Into the dumque
 watyr, that was depe *and* ful of stonys. the hors was mych *and* mortis
 stronge, *and* come Sone vp abow the watyr with hym. he wissed periculum
 the hors sydlynge ayeynes the watyr asquynt, *and* come ouer on the laudia
 othyr syde, and cried to his men, *and* seyde that he had a forde amore con-
 founde. but, for he found no man that hym wolde follow, but temnens.
 O knyght that [was] callid Geffrey Iudas, he turned agayn by that Curam
 Same wey (*and* the knyght come with hym) holde and Sounde; but itaque
 the knyght, through the Streyt[nys] of the watyr, was caste down, he fluminis
 and his hors, *and* drounde to-for ham all / whan Meyler, that lateraliter
 thedyr was with Reymonde come, this Sawe, he hadd gret envy obliquans.
 that Such boldnys sholde be tolde of any othyr, and nocht of hym: militem
 vpon the hors that hym bare, he Put hym-Sel^{se} in the watyr, *and* illum, in
 boldely, wyth-out any ferde, Passid ouer the othyr syde. The redeundo,
 Citteseynys Saw hym comyngge out of the watyr so al-oone: thay amnis im-
 came agayn hym, some forto kepe hym v^pward at his comyngge out petuosi
 of the watyr, forto make hym turne agayn; othyr, to vndo hym violencia
 ryght in the watyr. The knyght was stronge, and boldely Putte raptum, ad
 hym vp be-twen two Pere'is:—on oone halue, the wode rynnyngge ima sub-
mersumque
non re-
duxit.

A.D. 1175. watyr so grysly ; on othe^r halue, hys fomen, that *with* stonys & *with* Meiler is fawes hym leyden on, both at þe watyr, & vpon the wallys of the stoned and toun, þat ryght vpon the watyr stode. He pute hys sheld & hys shot at by the Limerick men. heed wyth the helme ayeyns the dyntes, & hertely held hym amydde 4 al þat harme, alone, wythout any helpe, ful unseker on al syde : þe Reimund crye was ful horyble on euery halue. And Reymond, that was at þe last of þe hoste, as hede & lodesman & prynce of al þe hoste, herde the crye, & wyst nat yit what hyt was. He come anoon hastily 8 thurgh al þe hoste, tyl he come to þe watyr ; & when he sawe hys neuue on that othe^r syde, so narowe byladde, & on al syde besete so narowe, he hadde grete angwysshe yn hys hert ; & sharpe & byttyrly bygan to cry to hys felowes : " Meⁿ that so stalwarth 12 ben of ryght kynd, & yn so fele Anguysshes *with* vs hath you^r streynth assayed, cometh forth, men ! the way ys open to-for vs, & the ford that noon of vs ne couth, throg^h hardynesse of ou^r y-found. folow we now the herty knyght, that so stronge ys 16 byladde, & let me hym neu^er so neygh to-for our eghen be I-shent ! " *With* that word, Reymond was þe fyrst that put hym yn þe watyr ; & al þe hoste aftyr dyde ham yn aduentu^r, & yn goddys grace, & wenten ou^r al quyte, bot o knyght that hete Guy, & twey fote- 20 men. her fomen flowen ² to-fore hem ynto the Cytè, & thay braken yn aftyr, & wan the cytè, & slown ful many of þe cytzeyns, & dreyntten. Thay fonden ther so myche gold & sylue^r & other rychesshe, that for that, & eke for the maystre || that god ham sent, 24 they told lytel of the perylle & the lostes that thay hadde ther-to-fore. Nowe arede ye, whyche was the hardyest of these thre knyghtes ? whether he, that wythout any man to-fore hym, put hym yn-to the watyr for to techen al the other the weye ; Athe^r 28 he, that, aftyr ensample of hym, & the horyble death of ham that weren I-dreynt to-fore har eyghen, passed the watyr, & al-one sette so hardyly hys body to mark amonge so many fomen ; Other he, that aftyr ham both, so hardyly & so boldly, *with* al the hoste, put 32 hym yn so gret perrylle ? Thus was, as the ³ tyme, lymeryk I-wonne

save
Meiler.

He and all
his host
swim the
Shannon,
and take
Limerick.

[Fol. 19
b.]

Which was
the boldest
of the
three ?
Davy,
Meiler, or
Reimund ?

¹ MS. fawes. Lat. creberrimis lapidum jaculorumque jactibus. *Op.* v. 322.

² MS. slown. Lat. fugatis in urbem hostibus, v. 322.

³ ? for 'at this.'

watyr so grymly; on the othyr syde, his enemys, that wyth stones A. D. 1175.
and with fawis hym leydyn on, both at the watyr, and vpon the creberri-
wallis of the toun, that ryght vpon the watyr stode. he Put his mis lapi-
shelde and his hede with the sallet¹, agayn the strokys, and hertely dum jacu-
helde hym amynd al the Perelis al-one, with-out any helpe, ful lorumque
vnsure on al sydis / the cry was ful horribill on euery syde. And jactibus.
Reymond, that was at the laste of the hoste, as hede and ledder and ¹galeam
prynce of al the hoste, herde the cry, and wyst not what hit was. ictibus
he come anoone hastely throw al the hoste, til he come to the watyr; clipeumque
and whan he Saw his eme on that othyr syde, so narrow besette, praetec-
he hadd grete angwysche in his herte; and sharpe and bittyr began dens.
to cry to his fellouys, "Men, that So bolde ben, of ryght kynde, and acriter ex-
in so many angwyschis with vs hath youre streynth proued, come clamavit:
forth, men! they way is oppenyd to-for vs; and the forde that noone Viri, qui-
of vs knew, through boldnys of ourre is founde. followe now the herty bus virtutis
knyght that so stronge is by-ladde; and lette we neuer so ney to-for rigorem
oure eyne be shente!" wyth that worde, Reymonde was the fryste insitum
*that * Put Hym in the Watyr; and al the Hoste aftyr did Ham in* novimus a
aduenture, and in goddys grace, and wenten ouer al quyte, (but natura,
o knyght, that was callid Guy, and two footmen,) ²her enemys quorumque
kylledyn to-for hem, into the Cite³, and Slowyn ful many of the in tot an-
Cittesynes, and dreyntyn². Thay foundyn ther so mych golde and gustis ani-
Siluyr, and othyr riches, that for that, and also for the Maystry that mositatis
god ham sende, thay tolde lytel of the Perel and the lostis that thay vires ex-
hadd ther-to-fore. Now ared þe, whyche was the boldyst of this perti
thre knyghtes: Whedyr he that, with-out any man to-for hym, put sumus.
hym in the watyr forto techyn al the othyr the wey; Othyr he that, Nota pã
aftyr Ensampill of hym, and the horribil deth of ham that weryn captionem
drovnde to-for har eyyn, Passid the watyr, and al-one sette so ciuitatis
hardy his body, to marke, amonge so many ennemys; Othyr he that, limeric.
aftyr ham both, so hardy and so boldely, with al the hoste, Put hym [*Fol. 18
in so grette Peril. Thus was as this tyme limerike take on b.]

²⁻² fugatis in urbem hostibus, non sine grandi civium strage, muros statim irruerunt; et urbe potiti cum victoria, spoliis plurimum ditati et auro, periculi damna lucri simul et laudis honore compensarunt. v. 322-3.

³ The English copier of this MS. has jumpt from the first 'Cite' to the second—see lines 21, 22 opposite,—and put 'killedyn' = 'slowen' l. 22 opp. for 'fowen,' l. 21 opp.

A. D. 1175. one a tywesday¹; Watyrford I-wonne one a tywesdaye, & dyuelyn
 Three Vic- also : nocht for o coste was that day awayted *per-to*, bot as hyt
 tories on a Tuesday, byfelle by cas & by adwentu^r; & nat wythout skyle, ffor the
 the day tywesday, by hethen men day yn the old world, was I-sette to a god⁴
 dedicated by hea- that day cleped Mars, & was I-hold god of bataylle; & on that day
 thens to Mars. thay fonden, þat whoso bataylle besoght, he shold spede better^r than
 yn *oper* dayes.

[CHAPTER XXXIX.]

Reimund
 Fitz-
 Gerald

was a far-
 seeing, self-
 restraind
 man,

watchful at
 night,

liberal,

and most
 skilful in
 War.

Meiler
 lookt dark
 and stern.

Now I wille yowe telle these twey stalwarth knyghtes, 8
 Reymond & Meyler, whych thay weren. Reymond was
 a man brod of body,² somdel more than metlyche, yolowe he^r &
 sam-crysp, grey eyghen & depe, somdel heyghe nose, neb rody,
 wel I-hewed, glad semblant & cleer²; man of moche methe & of 12
 grete *purueyaunce*; nothyng delycion, nother of mete ne of cloth;
 heet & cool, al I-lyche, wel he myght suffre; man of mych
 trauaylle; tholmode yn wreth; as redy he was to *serue*, to queme
 ham that he was ouer, as to be I-*serued* of ham. Whan he hoste 16
 ladde, he was so besy about to kepe the host, that oft he left
 slepe al the nyght, & wandredde about, spyenge & crynge for to
 look þat noon harme ne shold betyde, & for he wold euer fyrst be
 redy, yf hyt nede wer. & shortlych to sygge hys thewes & hys 20
 maneres, he was man free & meke, queynt & *purueynge*; & thegh
 he wer swyth hardy & wel taght yn wepne, of quenyntyse & of
 sleight yn syght, & of selth yn bataylle, he passed al othe^r³; &
 thegh he yn both we^r myche to preyse, he was better^r leder of 24
 hoste þan knyght.

[CHAPTER XL.]

Meyler was a man of durk semblant; blak eghen, &
 rogh lokynge; sterne semblant; of body, somdel more than
 methlych; ful stalwarth, wel I-brested, smal mydel⁴, armes & other 28

¹ Later note in margin: 'The^r-aftyre hyt was I-socoured one a tyweday.

²⁻² *staturaeque paulo plus quam mediocris; capillis flavis et subcrispis, oculis grossis, glaucis et rotundis, naso mediocriter elato, vultu colorato, hilari, ac sereno.* *Op.* v. 323.

³ *et quanquam animosus plurimum, et armis instructus, prudentia tamen rebus in martiis et providentia praecelebat.* v. 324.

⁴ *staturae paulo mediocri plus pusillae; corpore tamen pro quantitatis captu pervalido; pectore quadrato, ventreque substricto.* v. 324.

a tyvysday, theraftyr hit was socourid on a tywysday, waterford A. D. 1175.
 was take on a tyvysday, and deuelyn also. noight for oo Purpos *nec per in-*
 was that day wayted therto, but as hit befell by ease and by *dustriam*
 adventure, and not *with-out* skylle. For the tyvysday, by hethyn *haec, sed*
 men tyme in the olde worlde, was sette to a god that is callid Mars, *casu solo*
contigisse.
 and Was holde god of battayle; And on þat day thay fovndyn, that
 who-so battayl be-soght, he sholde spede bettyr that day than in
 othyr dayes.

[CHAPTER XXXIX.]

NOwe y wille you telle thes two bolde knyghtes, Reymond *Capitulum*
 and Meyler, whych they weryn // Reymond^r was a man *xxxix^m.*
 brode of body, somdel more than metlych, yolowe here, and sam- *Descriptio*
 crysp; grey eyn and depe, Somdel hegh nose, face rody we[1] hewid, *Reymundi*
 glad, semblante, and clere; man of mych mette and of grete Puruey- *Le gras.*
 aunce / nothyng deleyicious, nothyr of mete ne of cloth; ¹ hette and *Vir mo-*
 colde, al y-lyke, wel he myght suffyr; man of mych trauail; *destus et*
 tholmode in wreth; as redy he was to Serve, to queme ham that he *providus,*
 was ouer, as to be *seruyd* of ham ¹. Whan he hadd host, he was so *nec cibo*
 byssy about to kepe the hoste, that ofte he lefte Slepe al the nyght, *nec veste*
 and Walkid about, Spynge and crienge forto loke that noone harme *delicatus.*
 ne sholde befall, and for he wolde euer fryst be redy, yf hit nede
 were. And Sortely to Say his condicionys and his maneres, he was
 man fre and meke, queynt and Purueyng; and thegh he wer *providus*
 Swyth hardy, and wel taght in wepyn, of queyntyse and of Sleght *et prudens.*
 in fygh[t], and of Selth in battayl, he Passid al othyr; and thegh he ² *multum*
 in both were mych to Preyse², he was bettyr ledder of hoste than *quidem*
 knyght. *militis*
habens,
sed plus
ducis.

[CHAPTER XL.]

MEyler was a man of durkesemblant; ³blake eyne and rogh *Capitulum*
 lokyng; sterne Semblante; of body, somdel more than *xl^m.*
 metlych, ful bolde, wel brestyde, smale myddy, armys and othyr *oculis*
nigris et
torris.

¹⁻¹ caloris et alioris ei patientia par: vir patiens irae, patiensque laboris. Quibus praesidebat prodesse magis quam praesesse, potiusque minister quam magister videri volens.—*Op. v. 324.* (No Latin here for 'Whan . . . nede were.')

lymmes ful bony, more synowy than fleysly. he was knyht ful hardy & enuyouse; he was *neuer* aferde ne agryse to begynne thyng y n fyght that any man oght done hym on, Ather wyth otheṛ y-meued¹. In euery fyght, he was þe fyrst to begynne, & the laste that hyt wold leue. Al þe stalwarthnese that any man myght do, he wold passe, or suffre deth; the maystrye & prys to wynne, otheṛ deye,—nothyng he ne sette betwene. Of al thyng, bothe these knyghtes wē to preyse myche wyth-al, neṛ hyt that thay, through couetyse, oft byname holy chyrch heṛ ryghtes; bot more harme ys, & mychel to mourne, that defaute haddeṛ meste al ouṛ knyghtes from the forme begynnyng. What was Robert steuenessoṛ & hys sonnes yn haṛ tyme? what, Moryce fytz Geraud & hys sones? what, Robert debarry, of whom ys to-fore I-told? what, myles de seynt dauy? both Robertes & Moryce neueneu, that *wit* þe formest boldly come ynto Irland? what, Robert fyz henry, Meyleres brother? what, Reymond de Cante- tone? what, Robert de barry the yonge? what, Reymond hues- sone? what, otheṛ of the selue gentrye, many & I-nowe, whych hyt wā stronge to namen al by nam? for no mane ne myght hyt bethynk, bot haṛ stalwarthnesse ne heṛ good deddes shold *neuer* wend out of mynd. Thay wē a folke & a kynrede, on two halue, kyndly, stalwarth, & hardy; on other halue, of þe kynde of ffrance, & theṛ of wel I-taght yn wepne of myche * nembre (?) of kynred & kynd stalwarthnesse *euere* more to heṛ ende. Whan Reymonde hadde I-wonne the sytē of lymeryke, he ordeyned & *purueyed* how the cytē myght be best I-kept; he lete bryng theder vyttaylle on euery halue grete plente, & lefte þe Myles of seynt dauy, *wit* fyfty knyghtes & squyers an-hors, & ccc bowmen, & *wit* þe other parte of the hoste wyth yoy & gladnesse al harmles turned ayeine ynto leynestre.

[CHAPTER XLI.]

The lond was þan yn good pees vnder Reymondes kep- yng, so that non Iresshe-man ne durst hym stur mysdom. Heruy of Mommorthy, that *euere* hadde enuy to hym,

¹ Miles animosus et aemulus; nihil umquam abhorrens, quod aggredi quis vel solus debeat vel comitatus, v. 324.

Meiler was never afraid of any enterprise. He'd win or die. But he, and all the knights, robd the Church.

Praises of the Fitz-Stephens, Fitz-Geralds, St. Davids, Fitz-Henrys, Fitzhughs, &c.

The memory of their pluck and grand deeds shall never die out.

[*Fol. 20 a.]

A. D. 1175.

Reimund victuals Limerick, and leaves his cousin, Miles of St. David's, in charge of it. Hervey of Mont-maurice envies

4

8

12

16

20

24

28

32

lymes full bony, more synowy than fleshy. he was knyght ful hardy *and* Enuyouse; he was newyre aferde ne agryse to begynne thyng in fyght that any man ogh don hym \bar{on} , * Althyr wyth othyr ymewyd. In euery fyght, he was the fryst to Begynne, and pe laste hit to leue; al the boldnes that any man myght do, he wolde Passe, or suffyre dethe. The maystry and Prysce to wyu othyr dye, nothyng he ne sette betwen. Of al thyng, both this knyghtes were to Preyse mych wyth-all, nere hit that thay, throug covetyse, ofte toke holy church ryghtes; but more harme is, *and* gretly to morne, that defaute haddyn meste al our knyghtes frome the fryst begynnyng. / What was Robert Steuenes-sonne *and* his Sonnys; What, Robert de barry, of whom is to-for tolde; What, Morice fizgeraud *and* his sonnes; What, Miles de seynte dauy; both Robert *and* Morices emys, that wyth the fryst boldely come into Irland; what, Robert fiz-henry, Meyler-is brodyr; What, Reymonde de Canteton; What, Robert de barry the yonge; What, Reymond Hues-Sone; What, othyr of the same gentil, many *and* y-now, whych hit were stronge to telle by name? for no man ne myght hit be-thynke, but har boldenys ne her good dedys shold neuer go out of mynde.

¹ They wer a pepill and a kynred, on both sydys, be kynde, bolde and hardy; on othyr halue of the kynde of Fraunce, *and* ther-of wel taght in wepyn, of mych nembre, of kynred and kynde bolde, euer more to her ende¹ // Whan Reymonde hadd take the Cite of lymeryke², he ordeynynd *and* Purueyed how the Cite myght be best kepte: he lette bryng thedyr vytayll, on euery halue, grete Plente; *and* lefte ther Miles of Seynt dauy, with fifty knyghtes *and* Squerys an hors, and CCC bowmen; *and* wyth the othyr Parte of the hoste, with Ioy *and* gladnys, al harmeles, turned agayn Into leynystre.

Descriptio
Melerij.

[*Fol. 19
b.]

*inter mor-
tis et
murtis
triumphos,
nihil me-
dium
ponens.*

*Quid alii
generosi-
tatis ejus-
dem quam
plurimi,
quibus
insignia
singulorum
gesta
perennem
poterant
laudis
memoriam
promereri?*
²A. D. 1175.

[CHAPTER XLI.]

THe londe was than in good Pees vndyr Reymondys kepyng, So that non Irysh-man durst not styr hym to mysdone. Heruey of Mounmorthy, that euer had Enuy to hym, ne lefte not,

Capitulum
xlj^m.
*Herreius
de Monte
Mauricii.*

¹⁻¹ O genus! O gens! gemina natura, a Trojanis animositatem, a Gallis armorum usum originaliter trahens.—*Op.* v. 326.

A. D. 1175. Reimund Fitz-Gerald, and sends lies about him to Henry II, he left nat, for the allyance that was ham betwene, þat he ne dydde hym al þe harme that he myght, & opynly shewed than þe felony that he longe hadde I-borne yn hys hert. He sent ouer to þe kyng by Messagers, ¹ & made hym to vnderstond that Reymond was yn yndygnacion of the kyng; & ayeine hys owne trouth, so hauteyn I-worth, that he wold al Irland take to hym & to hys ¹; &, for hys lesynges shold þe bettyr be y-leued, feel þynges he made hym to vndrestond, & so fayr hyt slyked wyth falsnesse, that hyt somet sothe, al that he seyde. The kyng—as ofte manere ys that lydder tales ben bettyr I-leued, & lenger I-thoght, that good—he beleued þe fals mannys talys & wryyng, & sent yn-to Irland four Messagers, that ys to wytten, Robert the power, Osbern of herford, Wylyam Berynger, & Adam of yarmemouth, of whych the twey shold abyde with the Erle yn Irland, & þe other tweyn shold wende ayeine ynto England wyth Reymond, as þe kyng hym hadde *COMMAWNDET*.

which the King believes, and despatches Messengers to bring Reimund back.
Nota de aduentu powernter in hiberniam.

Hervey de Montmaurice

was as fair without, as he was foul within.
He was lecherous, incestuous, envious, treacherous,

a coward, a braggart, and a liar.

[CHAPTER XLII.]

Heruy was a man fayr & lygne, eyghen grey & depe, ouelyche lokyng, fayr semblaunt, of fayr spech & wordes wel besete; of body more than methlych, of al lymmes ful becomly; bot as fayr & as becomly as he was wytout, as lydder & as fals of many maner lastes he was wyt-In; ffor, fro the tyme that he was chyld, he yaf hymself to lecherye; & nat only to many sengle wommen; bot he ne synned neþer spousbrych ne syblynges; he was onful & bakbyter, ² wreyer, false & traytu, duble of tonge & nothyng stydfaste, butt yn ² falsnesse hys speche thoght as thogh hyt wer hony & mylk out of hys mouthe, bot euer hyt was I-meygnet with attyr at þe ende. Som tym he was stalwarth, as to knyght longeth; bot aftyr, he yaue hym selue more to cowerdyse than to knyghthode; & more he couth hym maken, thañ he was worth ³; hegh of beryng yn hous, & noght of plente; of mych speche, & lytel sothnesse.

¹⁻¹ illi sinistre rerum eventum indicarit: asseverans quoque Reimundum, contra regis honorem, et fidem debitam, non tantum Limericum, verum etiam Hiberniam totam, sibi suisque jam occupare proculdubio proposuisse.—*Op.* v. 327.

²⁻² These words are in a different hand.

³ MS. wroth.

for the alyaunce that was ham betwen, that he ne did hym al the harme that he myght, and opynly shewed than the felony that he longe thocht in herte. he sende ouer to the kynge by messangerys, and did hym to vndyrstonde, that Reymonde was in indignacion of the kynge; and agayn his owyn throuth, so Hauteyn I-worth, that he wolde al Irland take to hym and to his. And, for his lesyngys sholde the bettyr be belewid, ¹many lesyngys he made hym to vndyrstonde; and So fayre hit glosyd with lesyngis, that hit Semyd trouth, al that he sayde ¹. The kynge,—as ofte maner is, that fals talys ben bettyr belewid, and lengyr thocht ², than good,—he belewid the fals manes talys and accusynge, And Sende Into Irland foure Messagers, that is to wittyn, Robert de Power, Osbern of Herforde, Willam Berynger, And adam of Iarnemouth ³; of the whych, two sholde abyde with the Erle in Irland, and the othyr two sholde wende agayn in-to England, with reymond, as the kynge hym hadd comandyd.

*Et ut hoc
figmentum
delator
regis
auribus et
tutius et
probabilius
praesen-
taret.
² memoria
diuturnior.
Nota de
aduentu
Power-
encium in
Hiber-
niam.*

[CHAPTER XLII.]

HEruey was a man fayre and lygne, eyghyn grey and depe ⁴, lolych lokinge, fayre semblant, of fayre Speche and wordys wel besette * of body more than metlych, of al Lymmys wel becomly; But as fayre and as Becomly as he was wyth-out, As wickyd and as fals of many maner lastes he was wyth-In. // Fro the tyme that he was chylde, he yaued hym-Selfe to lechery, and not only to many Syngyl Women ⁵, but he ne synnyd neuer spousebrich ne siblynges; he was onfull and bacbyter, wreyer, fals and trechoure, doubill of tonge, and nothyng stydfast but in falsnesse; his spech, as hit were honny and mylke out of the mouth, but euer hit was medlid with wenym at the Ende. Sometym he was bolde, as longyth to a knyght; but aftyr, he yafe hym [more] to cowardyse than to knyght-hode; and more he made of hym-Selfe than he was worth; hey of beryge in house, and not of plente; of myche speche, and lytyl trouth.

*Capitulum
xliij^m.
Descriptio
Heruei.
[*Fol. 19
b.]
⁴ promi-
nentibus
aspectu
amabili.
⁵ nec
incestus
ullos, nec
adul-
teriam
vitans. Vir
invidus,
delator, et
duplex;
vir sub-
dolanus,
facetus, et
fallax.*

¹⁻¹ ad votum effectui mancipandum, in Bragmannorum morem conjuratas ad hoc catervas Reimundum assertit composuisse. v. 327.

³ Robertum Poerium, et Osbertum de Herlotera, Gulielmum de Bendinges, et Adam de Gernemes. v. 328.

[CHAPTER XLIII.]

A. D. 1176.

Reimund
hears that
Donnell
O'Brien,
King of
Limerick,
is besieging
the English
there.

Reimund
marches
for
Limerick,
[* Fol. 20
b.]

with
McMur-
rough
of Okensely
and King
Donnell of
Ossory.
The men
of Thom-
mond
barricade
the Pass
of Cashel
against the
English.

K. Donnell
of Ossory
appeals to
the Anglo-
Irish force
to fight
bravely.

Reymond hym dyght for to wende ynto England, as the
kyng hym commandet; & nothyng abode, bot wynd &
wedyr at the see: come Messagers, hastyly I-sent from the meygne
of lymeryke, & tolden that Obreen, the kyng of thomond, was 4
belyggyng lymeryke with ful grete hostes; &, for þey hadden
all the wytaylle þat Reymond ham lefte & eke that thay hadden
ther-aftyꝛ I-puchassed yn the wenter-tyme, al I-spendet, me shold
ham hastyly send socoure. The Erle was ful anguysshous ham 8
for to socour, & spake þer-of to the meygne, & besoght ham wel
yonre (yorne?) theder to go; bot thay war so wroth & so sory
for Reymondes wendinge away, that euerychon, with oo mouth,
for-soken alout, that, without Reymond, for nothyng theder thay 12
nold wend. The Erle toke consaylle heꝛ, of the kynges messagers;
&, for the thyng was yn grett perryll, at þe end, throgħ bysy
besechyng of the erle & eke of ham, Reymond turned ayeyne
the baneres toward * lymeryke. And as thay come toward 16
Casshel wyth the hoste,—as myght be, syxty knyghtes, & two
hundret squyers & thre hundret bowmen, wythout Iresshe-men
that comen eke wyth ham, as Macmorgħ of okensely & dofnild
of osserye,—me come to ham, & told ham, fore that pay of 20
thomond hadde I-lefte þe sege of lymeryke, & wer I-comen ayeyns
ham, to kepe ham yn the paas of Casshel; & thegħ the paas
was stronge yn hymselfe, thay kesten adoun tren, & made dyches
thaꝛ towꝛ, & hegges vpon, for noon horsmañ ne shold ouer wend. 24
Whan thay wereñ negħ to the pas I-comen, Reymond deled the
hoste a thre. & downyld, þe kyng of Ossery, that ful mychell
hated, & foman was to, ham of thomon, saw þe Englyshe hoste—
thegħ thay fewe weꝛ—of ful good herte, & wel & semly I-wepned, 28
for thay shold be þe trustyer, & the better herte haue to hem, &
seyd, “Men, that pys lond wyth stalwarthnesse haue I-wonne,
assayleth today styfly youꝛ fomen! ffor yf, ye, as youꝛ won ys,
ouercometh, & the maystry haue; ouꝛ sparthes, forth wyth your 32
swerdys, ouꝛ fomedñ smertly shulle foloweñ aftyr; & yf ye—that
god forbede!—ben ouercome, sykeꝛ be ye that we forth with ouꝛ
fomedñ wyllen turne vpon yowe. Take hede, knyghtes, & vnder-
stondeth, youꝛ townes & your castels ben welle ferꝛ hennes, & 36

[CHAPTER XLIII.]

REYmond made hym redy to go into England as the kyng
 and wedyr at the See. Come messagers hastely sende from
 the meny of limerike, and toldyn that Obreen, the kyng of
 Thomonde, was besegyn limerike with ful grete hostis; and, for
 thay haddyn al the vytail that Reymonde with ham had lefte,
 and also that thay purchasid sithenys, thay had al spende, And
 that thay sholde hastely sende ham Socoure. The Erle was ful
 angwyschous ham for-to socoure and Spake therof to the meny
 and besoght ham wel ofte thedyr to go, but thay were so wroth
 and So sory for Reymondes goynge away, thay euerchone wyth o
 woysse forsokyn al, that wyth-out Reymonde for no-thinge thedyr
 thay wolde goo. / The Erle toke consayl her-of of the kynges
 messangers, and for the thyng was in gret Perel. at the Ende
 throw besechyng of the Erle and also of ham Reymond turned
 agayn the baners toward limerike. And as thay come to-ward
 cassel with the hoste—as myght be, Sixti knyghtys and two hundrid
 Squyeres and iijc bowmen, without Iryssh-men that comyn also
 with ham, as Macmurgh of O-kensley and dofnyld of Ossery—they
 come to ham, and tolde ham, ¹fore that thay of Thomon hadd lefte
 the sege of limerike, and were comyn agaynes ham, to kepe ham in
 the Paas of Casshel; and thegh the Paas was stronge in hym-Selfe,
 thay castyn adoun trees, and made dichis thartowre, and heggys
 vpon, for noone hors-man ne sholde ouer-wende. When thay wer
 ney to the Paas y-come, Reymond delid the host a thre. And
 downyld, the kyng of Ossory, that gretly hatid, and enemy was
 to ham of Tomonde, Saw the Englyssh host (thegh thay few were)
 of ful good herte, and wel semely wepenyd; and for thay sholde be
 the trustier, and the bettyr herte haue to them; and sayde, “Men,
 that wyth boldnes this londe haue conquerid, assaylyth this day
 styfly youre enemys! For an ye, as youre wone is, ouercomyth, and
 the maystry haue, our Sparrys, forth with youre Swerdys, oure
 enemys smyrtly shall follow aftyr. And yf ye (that god forbede!)
 ben ouer-come, syekyr be ye ²that we forth with oure enemys wil
 turne vpon yow. Take hede, knyghtys, and vndyrstondyth, youre
 * tounys and your castelys Ben wel ferre Hennes, and the flyght ful

Capitulum
xliij^m.

A. D. 1176.

quoniam
omnia ali-
menta, tam
ibi inventa
quam at-
tracta,
brumali
tempore
consump-
serant.
se illuc
ituros
absque
Reimundo
omnes
unanimit-
er contra-
dicent.

¹audivit
Tuhetmo-
nienses,
obsidione
relicta, ei
in passu
Cassiliensi
obiciam
venisse; et
locum,
natura
difficilem,
confrugis
arborum
et fossatis
plurimum
easpe-
rasse;
sepem
quoque
fortissi-
mam ex
transverso
locasse.
²in eos cum
hostibus
procul-
dubio con-
vertentur.
[*Fol. 20
a.]

A. D. 1176. the flyght ful longe, & oūr maner ys, to helpe ham that ben omost, & folowe the fleynge. trysteth wel to vs; bot no lenger than the ouer hand ys your̄." ¶ Whane thys was yseyd, Meylēr, pat was yn the formeste of the host, smertly spronge out, as sparke out of fȳr; & al the host aftyr stalwartly com to the pas; & nat wyt-out gret slaght of ham that wythstoden, opened the way, & wentten ouer an estre euen, & a thrydde ester day, that ys to wentten, on a tywesday, as at the othēr tyme. Also nowe, the host come ynto lymeryk, Reymond lete ryght & arē that, throgħ the sege of hār fomen, was I-wasted & destrued. & nat lange thēr-aftyr, he held parlement wyth the kyng of Connaght & the kyng of Thomon, bot yn oo day bot nat yn o place; ffor the kyng of Connaght held hym yn the watyr of the shynen, yn a myche logħ, yn botys, & the kyng of Thomon was thār negħ yn a wodde. Reymond was betwene two, at kyldalo, as myght by, syxten myle frome lymeryk. Thēr was the parlement so fer forth I-dryuen, that euery of ham delyuered to Reymond good hostages, & othes many-fold sworne hold & trewe, yn good pees for to hold euer este to the kyng & to hys. Whan thys was I-done, & Reymond turned ayeyne wyth hys hostages to lymeryke, þe prynce of desmond, Dermot Maccarthy, sent by messagers to Reymond, & besoght hym that he ayeyne hy[s] eldeste sore that hete Cormoc Olethān—tha[t] wel negħ hym out of hys kyngedome I-putte—hym, as the kynges trew man, shold helpe; & large yiftes he byhete, both to Reymond & the meygne, wyth that that thay wold hym helpe. Reymond, as mān that had nat loth wynnynges, ne hymself to auance, spake her-of to hys falawes, & thay alle graunted to dōn as he wold, & turned the baners toward the Contreys of Cork. by weyes as thay wentten, thay name many prayes, wher̄-of the meynge was ful wel apayed, & mych ther-of was oft I-sent to lymeryk, so longe, that throgħ help of Reymonde, Dermot recouered al hys kyngedome vpon hys sone —of whyche he was negħ I-pute owt:—the sone was I-take & delyuered to the fadyr, & he hym pute yn pryssoun, & nat longe ther-aftyre hym be-lete take out of pryssoun, & smyth of hys hede.

Meiler Fitz-Henry leads the attack, and forces the Pass on Easter Eve April 3. They enter Limerick, and repair it. Reimund, at

Killaloe,

induces the Irish rebels to swear allegiance to Henry II. He then agrees to help Dermot Maccarthy against his son Cormack.

Reimund marches to Cork, and beats Cormack,

who is put in prison, and then beheaded.

Longe. ¹ And oure maner is, to helpe ham that ben omyste, and follow the fleynge. trystyth wel to vs; but no longyr than ye haue the ouer hande" / Whan this was sayde, Meyler, that was in the formyst of the hoste, smyrtly styрте out, as sparke of fyre; and al the host aftyr, boldely come to the Paas; and not wyth-out gret slaght of ham that wythstodyn, openyd the way, and wentyn ouer an Estre-evyn, and the thyrd Estyr-day, that is to say, on a tyvysday, as at the othyr tyme. also now þe hoste come to lymerik, Reymond lette rere that throw the sege of har enemys was wastid and destrued. and not lange ther-aftyr, he helde Parlement wyth the kyng of Connaght and the kyng of Thomonde, both in oo day, but not in oo Place; For the kyng of Connaght helde hym in the watyr of shynny, in a myche logh, in botis, and the kyng of Thomonde was thar negh in a wodd. Reymonde was betwen two at kyldalo, as myght by, systene mile from lymerik. Ther was the Parlement So fer forth drywen, that euery of ham delyuerid to Reymond good hostagis, and othis manyfolde Sworn, holde and trew, in good Pees forto holde euer aftyr to the kyng and to his. Whan this was don, and Reymond turned agayn with his hostagis to lymerike, the Prince of Desmonde, Dermot Maccarthy, sende by messagers to Reymonde, and besoght hym that he-agayn his eldyst Sone that hete Cormok Olethan, that wel ney hym out of his kyngdome Putte,—hym, as the kynges trew man, sholde helpe; and large yftys he Promysyd, both to Reymond and the meny, yf thay wolde hym helpe. Reymond, as man that had no loth wynnynge, ne hym-Selfe to auctorice, Spake herof to his fellowis; and thay al graunted to do as he wolde, and turned the baners toward the contreis of Corke. ² by weyes as thay wentyn, thay rerid many Prayes, Wherof the meny was ful wel appayed and wel arrayed, and mych therof was ofte sende to lymerik. So longe, that by the helpe of Reymond, Dermot recoverid al his kyngdome vpon his sone, of whom he was ney Putt out / the Sone was take, and delyuerid to the Fadyr; and he Putt hym in prysone. and not longe ther-aftyr, hym he lette take out of pryson, and smyte of his hede.

A. D. 1176.

Nota quod hibernici non sunt amici nisi quandiu forma faciet.

¹ Et nos victoribus semper adhuc- rentes, solum persequimur fugientes. De nobis itaque corfidite, sed victores.

fidelitatem Anglorum regi et suis de cetero inriolabiliter exhibendam sacramentis corpora-liter prae-stitis renouaverit.

² Multis itaque tum praediis in brevi quam stipendiis, familia in partibus Ulis abunde refecta, et alimen- torum copia Li- mericum abinde persaepe transmissa.

A.D. 1176.

[CHAPTER XLIV.]

[Fol. 21a.]

Reimund
Fitz-
Gerald
hears from
his wife
Basile,

that her
bad tooth
is out,

i.e. that
Earl Stri-
guil is
dead, tho'
his death
is kept
secret.

Reimund's
Council
advise him
to quit
Limerick,
and take
his men to
Leinster.

So he com-
mits Limerick
to
O'Brien,
who swears
to keep it
in peace;
but at once
breaks his
oath, and
destroys
the Bridge.

The whyle that Reymond was in this maner yn
desmon, come a Messager to hym ffrom dyuelyn,
hastyly I-sent, & broght hym a *lettre* from basile, hys wyf; bot
he that hyt broght, wyst nat what hyt was. Reymond hadde 4
wyth hym a clerk that he wel tryst to; he lete hym rede the
lettre priuelych, that thus myche hym seyde: "To hyre leue
lord & hyr spouse Reymond, hys basyle sendeth gretynge. as to
hyr selue, wyt thou, lef man, that the grete chek-toth that so sore 8
me oke, ys I-falle. Wherefore, yf thou any thyng recheeste of thy
self, other of me, ne leue nat to come hastyly to me." Whan
Reymond thys herd, he vnderstode that the mych toth that hyr
was I-falle, betokned þe Erles deth; for he lefte hym ful seke at 12
dyuelyne, whan he parted from hym. And thegh he lange ther-to-
fore was ded, for drede of Iresshe-men he was for-hold tyl
Reymondes comes, & the meygnees, ynto leynestre. Reymond
turned sone to lymeryke. & þe sorow that was yn hys hert 16
with-yn, he, for al hyt, as myche as he myght, *with* fayr semblant
makyng *with-out*; & ful fewe men, he shewed the aduentur that
so sodeynly was byfalle; & of ham that mooste good kouth, he
besoght consaylle & rede, what was ham to done. Than was 20
comenly haer rede such: "what fore the erles deth, what for
Reymondes wendinge out of the lond, that the syte of lymeryke,
that was so fer, & amonge so many enemyes, me shold leue voyde;
& al the meygne holy led ynto leynestre, þe townes vpon þe see 24
& the castels for to kepe." Reymond, thegh hym loth wer,
graunted thys, & stod to haer rede; &, for he ne fond none that
aftyр hym wold ther abyde, he betoke Obreñ, the kyng of
thomond, the Cytè to kepe as the kynges baroun, & toke of hym 28
este newe hostages, & many new othes I-swore, the toun harmles
for to kepe, & the pees trewly for to hold. Vpon thys forward,
thay wentten al out of the Cytè, & lefte Obreñ & hys men *with-yn*;
& vnnethes thay war I-passed the brygge, that þe tother end nas 32
I-broken anoon ryght behynd ham, & þe toun, that wel & fast was
I-walled, & wel I-byld *with* good housses I-herlerged o wyttaylle
that on euery half pether was I-broght well I-stoffe, nat *without*

[CHAPTER XLIV.]

A.D. 1176.

The while that Reymond was in this maner in
 desmonde, come a Messager to hym frome deuelyn,
 Hastly sende, and broght hym a lettyr frome basyle, his wyfe;
 but he that hit broght, wyst not what hit was. Reymond hadd
 with hym a clerke that he trust wel to. / He mad him rede the
 lettyr priuely, þat thus mych hym sayde: "To hir welbelowid lorde
 and Spouse, Reymond, his basylle sendyth gretynge. as to hyre-
 Selve, wit thou, lefe man, that the grete chektoth that so sore me
 grewid, is falle; Werfor, yf ye rekyth any-thinge of youre-Selve,
 othyr of me, ne leue not to come hastily to me." When Reymond
 this herde, he vnderstod by the mych toth, that * Hyr was fall,
 Betokenyd the Erllys deth; for He Lefte Hym ful seke at deuelyn
 when he lefte hym. And thegh he lang therto-for was ded, for
 fere of Irysh-men, he was for-holde tyl Reymondes comys and
 the menyys, in-to leynystere. Reymond turned sone to lymerike.
 and the Sorrow that was in his herte wythin, ¹ he, for al hit, as
 mych as he cowthe, made fayre semblant without ¹; and to ful few
 men he shewid the aduenture that so sodeynly was byfall; and of
 ham that moste good couth, he besoght consayl and rede, what was
 ham to done. Than was comynly har consail Such, "what for the
 Erllys deth, what for Reymondys ² wendinge out of the londe, that
 the Cite of lymerik, that was so ferre, and amonge so many enemys,
 that they sholde leue woyde; and al the meny, holy lede Into
 leynystere, the tovnes and the castelys vpon the See forto kepe."
 Reymond, thegh loth hit was to hym, gravntyd this, and stode to
 har rede; and, for he ne found none that aftyr hym wolde byde
 there, He yaued Obreyne, the kynge of Thomonde, the Cite to kepe
 as the kynges barovne, and toke of hym, fryst, new hostagis, and
 many new othys Sware, the toune harmles forto kepe, and the Pees
 trewely forto hold / Vpon thys, thay wentyn al out of the Cite,
 and lefte obreen and his men within / and vnnethys thay were
 Passyd the brige, that the othyr ende nas brokyn anoone ryght
 behynde ham; and the toun, that wel and faste was wallid, ³ and wel
 bylid with good houses, I-herbergid of wyalis, that on euery halfe
 thedyr was broght wel stuffid, not wythout gret Sorynys of herte,

Capitulum
 xliiij^m.
 nota De
 morte
 comitis
 Richardi.

quod dens
 ille molaris
 et magnus,
 qui tantum
 mihi dolu-
 erat, jam
 cecidit.

[*Fol. 20
 b.]

usque ad
 Reimundi
 famili-
 aeque redi-
 tum.
 1-1 exte-
 riorevultus
 hilaritate
 valde dissi-
 mulans.

totamque
 familiam
 integre.

Duvenaldo
 Tuhetmo-
 niae prin-
 cipi.

³ aedificiis
 decenter
 ornatum,
 alimentis
 undique
 congestis
 plane
 refertum.

² de[parting?] at first written here.

A. D. 1176. grette sorynesse of hert, thay sawe on foūr partyes I-sette aſȳr; & thys the traytour Obren shewed openlych how me shal tryst to Iryshemen trouth. ¶ Reymond, *with* all the meygne, wentt hym tho to dyuelȳn; & the Erles body, that by hys byddyng was I-kept vnburied, [was buried] yn the modyr-church of þe Trynyte, to-for the swete rode, by *procuryng* of sent laurence, that was yn that tyme erchebysshoppe of dyuelȳn.

[CHAPTER XLV.]

Henry II's Commissioners go back to him. **A**ftȳr that þe Erle was dede, the kynges messagers, that werend aftyr Reymond I-come, vpon newe aduenturs toke new consaylle. Thay lefte Reymond keper of Irland, & wentten ham ynto Engeland hastily to the kyng, & told hym of thē erles deth, & the state of the lond. The kyng

Nota the goodnesse of Geraud.

Henry II sends Wm. Fitz-Audeline and others to Ireland.

[* Fol. 21 b.],

Reimund yields all his townes and hostages.

His fine retinue excites Fitz-Audeline's envy,

and he always works against Reimund and the Geraldines.

sent than ynto Irland, Wylliam aldelinesesone, *procuratour* of the lond, *with* x knyghtes of hys ow̄n priue meygne; & *with* hym, Ihōn de Courcy *with* other x; Robert steuenessone & Myles de Cogān, pat al two yer̄ yn engeland & yn gascoyne nobly hadden *with* the kyng I-be, come þān ynto Irland *with* xx^{ti} knyghtes. Tythynges come to Reymond that thay wār arryued; & he anoon-ryght went ayeysn ham *with* mych gladnesse * & fayr felawshyppe of knyghtes to Weysford. Ther he yeld vp to Wylliam, as to Seneschal from the kyng I-sent, al the kynges townes, & hys castels, & al the ostages of Irland. Wylliam sawe Reymond wyth so many & so fayr yonglynges bylad, & beheld Meyllēr & other knyghtes of hys kyn, fayr & ryehely y-wepned of o maner vepne, wel thrytty, vpon ful faȳr hors, sheldes about hār nekkes, & spers yn hand, pleynge to-geddre ynto al the feldes: he turned hym to hys men, & seyde al soft, "Thys pryde shal be pute In, ar hyt be lange, & þese sheldes to-dreued." Ffro that tyme euer aftyr, these & meste al other *proc[ur]atours* yn Irland, as thoght hyt wēr by on oth togeddre I-swore, throgħ ond & enuy ne stynt neuer to besech Reymond & Meillēr, Robertes sones, & Moryce, & al thāt kynrede, al þe enuy that þay myght & durst; for þys ys euermore hār wayte & hār aduentur: euer whān grete nede byfelle yn tyme of wēr, thay war lef & derward, & the formeste to I-clepped, & to bataylle, throgħ hardynes, formest & fyrst redy; whān non ned was,

thay Saw on foure Parties sette a fyre. And thus the tray-toure
 Obreyñ shewid opynly how we sholde trust to Iryssh-men trowth //
 Reymond, with al the meny, went to deuelyñ; and the Erlis body
 that by his byddyngge was kepte vnburied [was buried] in þe modyr
 church of the trynyte, to-for the Swete Rode, by procuryngge of
 Seynt laurance, that was in that tyme Archebyschope of Deuelyn.

[CHAPTER XLV.]

Aftr that the Erle was dede, the kynges mes-
 sangers, that weryn aftr Reymond come, vpon new
 aduentures toke new consail. Thay lefte Reymond keper of
 Irland, and thay went into Englande hastely to the kyng, and tolde
 hym of the Erle-is deth, and the state of the londe // The kyng
 sende than into Irland, Willam Aldeliny's Sone, Procuratoure of the
 londe, x. knyghtis of his owyn Pryue meny; And with hym Ihon de
 Cursi, with othyr x; Robert Steuen-es [sone] and Miles de cogan,
 that al two yere in England and in gascoyn nobely haddyn with
 the kyng be, come than Into Irland with xx^{ti}. knyghtis. Thythynges
 come to Reymond that thay ware londid; and he anone-ryght went
 agaynes ham with mych gladnys, and fayre felochipp of knyghtes,
 to weysforde. Ther he yaued to Willam, as to Senescal from the
 kyng sende, al the kynges townes, and his castelis, and al the
 hostages of Irland. Willam Saw Reymond with so many and so
 fayre yonglynges * Bylad, And Be-Helde Meyler and Othyr
 Knyghtes of His Kyn, fayre and riche wepenyd of o maner
 wepyn, wel xxx^{ti}, vpon ful fayre hors, sheldys aboute har neckys,
 and sperris in honde, Pleyngge to-gadderer in-to al the feldys.
 He turned hym to his men, and sayde al softe, "This Pryde shal
 be Put In¹ ar hit be lange, and this sheldys to-dreued." Fro that
 tyme euer aftr, and thes and most al othyr procuratoures in
 Irland, as thegh hit were by one othe to-giddy Sworne, throg
 hate and envy ne stynte thay neuer to malyngne agaynys Reymond
 and meylor, Robert-es Sonnes and Morices, and al the kynred of
 geraldines, al the envy that thay myght and durste; for this is
 euer-more har abydyngge and har aduenture: Euer whan grete
 nede bifel in tyme of werre, thay wer lese and derwarde, and the
 fryst to be callid for bolnys, and to battail fryst redy; whan no

A. D. 1176.

corpus
 comitis
 quod . . .
 fuerat re-
 servatum
 . . . in ec-
 clesia . . .
 est tumu-
 latum.

Capitulum
 xlv^m.

Nota the
 goodnys
 of GERALD-
 dynes.

Nota de
 adventu
 Willelmi
 Adellini
 filij, et
 Iohannis
 de Cursi,
 in Hiber-
 niam.

¹ Super-
 biam
 hanc, in
 brevi com-
 primam, et
 clipeos
 istos
 dispergam.

[*Fol. 21
 a.]

Nota de
 geraldinis.

Nota
 causam
 invidie
 inter
 adelini
 filium et
 geraldinos.

Semper in
 armata
 militia
 cari.

A. D. 1176. anoon̄ thay weṛ loth, & I-pute abake ; heṛ felowshyp I-left yīd yurne
to harme. Na the wodde of haṛ gentryce, throug non enuy ne
myght neuer be I-rotet; for euer ham spryngyth new spourges, of
whych the myght yn the lond nys nat lytelle. Who beth that 4
Yet the
Geraldines
won and
kept
Ireland.
kepeth the contreys? the Geraudynes: Who throug þurleth the
hostes? the Geraudynes: Who ben that fomen adredeth? þe
Geraudines: Who ben that enuy bachyteth? þe Geraudines.

Had justice
been done
them,
they'd
have held
the land in
peace.
Hade thay I-found prynce yn any tyme, that haṛ stalwarthnesse 8
ham had y-yold, as thay worthy weṛ, yn good pees & stydfast
hadden I-broght the state of Irland. Bot thegh thay nededen
neuer so well, thay ne hade bot lytele thanke, otheṛ noon; haṛ
trauaylle yuel I-yold, & ouerthrow yn haṛ goodnesse, & mysbeleue 12
& bachytyng of haṛ stalwarthnesse; & to otheṛ, the prynces
trysten, wyt whych no staluarthnesse was I-founde, ne no power
hadde well to done without helpe & socouṛ of ham. And also
Aldelinese-sone, at hys comynge ynto Irland, he wente from touz to 16
toun vpon̄ þe see, & þrogh soght the Cyttes theṛ plente was of
mete & drynke; bot the monteynes, & þe londes with-In, nold he
neuer come negh. gold & syluyre, whaṛ-of mych plente was yn þe
lond, wel hungrylych he gaderede, to helpe-with pledynge & 20
pullyng of pees men, & nogh of theues ne of reuers. In that
tyme, about myd-heruest, Moryce fyzt-Geraud deyed, nat without
gret Sorynesse of al hys, & mych harme & lost to al Irland; ffor
he was a man methefull, suttell, & stalwarth: treweṛ man ne 24
stydfaster mañ, ne left he non yn Irland. ¶ Wyllyam adelinese-
sone ran Moryce sonnes to harme anon, & ne stynt neuer tyl he
hadde I-take of hym þe Castel of Wykelowe wyth falsnesse. of
Reymond & Robert steuenesse-sone, he name the londes that thay 28
hadden yn the vale of dyuelyn & yn Ophelayn; & otheṛ that
hadden londes yīd pes, he name thay londes to the kynges behoud,
& delyuered ham londes furthyre yīd marche, & yn perryll nexth
haṛ fomen: al with vnryght, & by hys owne wyll; ffor theṛ ys 32
nothyng so bold ne so kene as ys that mañ that ys of noght
I-come, Whan he ys an-hegh I-broght, & vnkyndely I-sette yn
maystry. ¶ Wyllyam was a man mych of body, & of makynge;

[*Fol. 22
a.] * good met-yeuer; fre & corteys by semblant; bot al that he dyde any 36

Fit-
Audeline
sought his
ease, and
opprest
the poor,
not the
thieves.
Maurice
Fit-
Gerald dies
about Sept.
1. No
truer man
was left in
Ireland.
Fit-Aude-
line robs
Maurice's
sons.

No one is
so keen as
an upstart
set to rule.

nede was anon they were hatyd *and* Putte abake, her fellochip A. D. 1176.
 left *and* turne to harme. // Na the wodd of har gentryce, through
 non envy ne myght, neuer be y-roted, for euer ham spryngyth Nota de geraudynes.
 new Spourgis, of whych the myght in the londe is not lytell.
 What ben thay that kepyth the contrayes? the Geraudynes. Who Qui sunt qui penetrant hostis penetrantia?
 throw thurlyth the hostis? the geraudines. Who ben that Enemyes
 dreddyth? the geraudynes. What ben thay that envy bachityth?
 the geraudines. Hade thay found prynce in any tyme that har Note the harde adventure of Geraldines.
 streynth ham wolde yeue, as thay worthy wer to haue / in good
 pees *and* stydfast thay haddyn broght the state of Irland. But
 thegh thay euer so wel had done, thay hadd but lytyll change,
 or noone, for her laboure. But euer thay profited in har goodnys ;
 and mysbeleue and bachitynge, of hare boldnys. And to othyr
 the Pryncis trystyn, wyth whych no boldnys was founde, ne
 Power had wel to do / *with-out* helpe and Socoure of ham //
 And also Aldelines Sonne, at his comynge into Irland, he went
 from toun to toun vpon the See-syde, *and* throw soght the Citteis Nota quo tempore mortuus erat ille Mauricius geraldii filius.
 ther Plente was of mette and drynke; but the montayns *and* the
 londe *with-In*, he wolde neuer come ney. / golde *and* syluer, wherof
 mych Plente was in the lond, wel hungryly he gadderid to-giddy,
with pledynge and Pullynge of peese men, *and* not of theuys ne of
 Robers. In þat tyme about Mid-heruest, Morice fiz-geraud deyed, Descriptio Mauricii fiz geraud.
 not *with-out* grette Sorrow of al his, *and* mych harme and lostes to
 al Irlande // For he was a man meteful, Suttyl *and* bolde : trewer
 man, ne stydfastyr man, ne lefte he none in Irlande // Willam (See p. 76. 7.)
 Aldelins sone ran Morices sone to harme, *and* styntid neuer til he
 hadd take of hym the castel of Wickelow wyth falsnes. Of fraudulenter eripuit.
 Reymond *and* of Robert Steuenes-sone, he toke the londys that
 thay hadd in the vale of Deuelyn, *and* in Ophelan; *and* othyr that
 hadd londis in Pees, he toke thay londys to the kynges be-howe,
 and delyuerid ham landys furthyr in Marche, *and* in Peril nexte Asperius nihil est humili, cum surgit in altum. Claud. Entrop. i. 181.
 har enemyes, al *with* vnryght *and* by his owyn will. For ther is
 nothyng so bolde ne so kene, as is that man that is of noght come,
 whan he is an-hey broght, *and* vnkyndely sette in Maystry¹ //
 Willam was a man mych of body *and* of makynge, good mete-
 * yeuer, fre and corteysse By Semblant. But ale that He did any [* Fol. 21 b.]

Bad character of William de Fitz-Audeline.

to wysype al hyt was yn spyngye, felonye, & trecherye; euer he shedde attyr vndyr hony. To-day he wold do the wyrshyp, to-morow he wold the reue & do shendshype; the meke & þe lotles he vndedde, þe sterne & the hawteyn he plessed; softe with 4 wyld men, & hard with pees men; of fayr spech, soft, fals, trecheur; argþ & enuyous, dronklewe & lecheour.

A. D. 1177.

[CHAPTER XLVI.]

John de Courci sees Fitz-Audeline's rascality.

Iohan de Courcy saw that al thyngye that Willyam dydde was couetise And trecherye, & that he nas 8 nothyngye trewe to ham that vndyr hym weþ, ne dredlyche to the mysdoynge. he chase hym of the meygne of dyuelyn a few, bot thay weþ good & stalwarth & hardy throug al thyngye, so that he hadde xx^{iiij} knyghtes, fyfty squyers, & fotmen as myght 12 be by ccc, & went hym ynto Vlnesteþ, whare non engeleshe-man I-wepned to-foþ hym was I-seye. Than was fulfilled a prophecye of Merlyn, that thys seyð: "A whyt knyght, syttyngye on a whyt hors, beryngye fowles yn hys sheld, shal formest assayll 16 Vlnestre." Thys Iþon was a man ful whyt, & rood þan vpon a whyt hors, & baþ yn hys sheld, ernes I-peynted. he went hym throug Myth & throug Vryel thre dayes goynge; & the forth day erlych, come to doune without any lete of any fomañ. 20 Vnwyttyngye he come; In he wente. dyuelyn, the kynge, was shorthlych a-fryght of so derne comyngye, left the toun & flow; the meygne, that was myssaysye & hungry, fond ther mete & drynke Inowe, & pylfre of gold & syluer & clothes, & eke whaþ-wyth thay 24 waþ wel arrayed, & har hert wel comforted. Into the toun was

He gets troops from Dublin; invades Ulster,

and takes Down. King Mac Donlevy flees.

than I-come a legat of Rome, that hete Vyuyeñ, & was y-come out of scotland. Thys legat was youre aboute, pees to make betwene the kynge & Iohn: myche he spake & mych he hym profred, & 28 more he behete, & trewage to bereñ euery yeþ to Englyssh-men, by so that he wold the lond leue, & turne ayeayne. Myche he spake theþ-of, & mych hym bysoght; bot nocht he wold hym hyþ, ffor hys thought was al I-turned, the lond for to wyn, or the lyf to forlese. 32 Donleue saw that he, wyth fayþ spech ne fayr beheste, nocht ne myght spede; he sent anoon aftyr hys folke, & withyn the viij day he gadered to-gyddþ an hoste of ten thousand men, stalwarth

The Pope's Legate, Vivian, tries to get rid of De Courci,

who means to win or die.

to wyrchyppe, al Hit was in Spyinge, felony, and trechery; *ener* he shed Venym vndyr hony. Tho day he wolde do the wyrchipp; to-morrow he wolde the rew, *and* do shenshipp. the meke and the *buxum* he vndid; the sterne and hawteyn he Plesyd; Softe *with* wykle men, harde *with* Pees men; of fayre spech, Softe, fals trechoure; feynthe *and* Envyous, dronklewe *and* lecherere.

[CHAPTER XLVI.]

A. D. 1177.

IOhan de Cursy Saw that al thyngge that willam did was couetyse and trecherye, and that he was nothyngge trew to ham that vndyr hym were, ne dredfull to his enemys. He chose hym of the meny of Deuelyn a few, but thay were good *and* bolde, and hardy through al thyngge, So that he hadd xxijti knyghtis, fyfty Squyeres, *and* footmen as myght be by thre hundred, and wente hym to vlyster, whar noone Englysh-man wepenyd for hym was seyn. Than was fulfillid a prophesy of merlyngge, that thus sayd: "a whyte knyght, syttyngge on a whyte hors, berryngge fowlis on his shelde, shal formyste assayle vlystere." This Ihon was a man ful whyte, and rode vpon a whyte hors, and bare in his shelde, ernys y-peyntyd. he went throw myth *and* throw Vriel thre dayes goyngge; and the fourth day Erlych, come to doune, wythout any lette of any enemy. Vn-wyttyngge he come; In he wente. Dunleue, the kyngge, was schortlych agaste of so suddeyn comyngge, lefte the toun and flow; the mayny, that was myssaysid and hungry, founde ther mette and drynke y-now, and Pylfre of golde and Syluyr *and* clothis, *and* also wher-*with* thay wer wel arrayed, and her herte wel confortid. In-to the toun was than y-come a legate of Rome that was callid Vyuyen and was come out of scotlonde. this legate was besy about, Pees to make be-twen the kyngge *and* Ihoñ. mych he spake, *and* mych he hym proferid, *and* more he promysyd, *and* trewage to bere euery yere to Englyssh-men, So that he wolde the lond lewe, *and* turne agayn. gretly her-of he spoke *and* be-soght; but noght he wolde hym hyre; For his thoght was al turned, the londe forto wyne, or his lyfe for-sake. Dounleue Saw that he, wyth fayre speche ne fayre promes, nothyngge myght spede¹. he send anoone aftyr his Pepill, and wyth-in viij^e dayes he gaddrid to-giddy an hoste of x. M¹

Descriptio
Willelmi
Aldelmi.Capitulum
xlvi^m.argent
iiij egles
displayed
gules
crowned
armed
and
beaked
golde.Romanae
sedis
legatus.
multa
quidem
verbu sua-
soria nec
persua-
soria pro-
ponebat.¹ se verbis
minime
profectu-
rum.

Mac Don-
levy be-
siegies De
Courci in
Down.

to fyght, & besegete staluarthly the Cyte of doun *per* Iohñ was In ;
for yn thys lond, as yn al otheṛ, the northeren meñ ben stordyer &
smerteṛ to fyght than otheṛ. Iohñ saw thay hostes comynge to
hym-ward: thegh he fewe weṛ, natheles thay waṛ al hardy & stal- 4

De Courci
leaves his
corner of
the town,
sallies out,

to assaye the aduenturs of battaylle, than yn the lytel feble fortelet
that he yn & herne of the toun yn so lytel whyle hadde arerede,
amyd hys fomen, beseged & hungrod, deye. He went hym out to 8
hard fyght: & whan thay hadde fyrste, from ferṛ, I-suywed har
arowes, thay smytten theṛ aftyre hertelych to-gydder, sper ayeyne

fightis
splendidly,

sper, swerd ayeyne sparth; & many one the lyf ther forlese. Bot
who hadde y-sey Iohñes dynttes *with* swerd, how he smote of þat man 12
þe heed from the scholderes, that man the arme & þe shuldre from
þe body, that man the heed I-clouen fer doun * ynto the body, he
myght wel sygge that hys myght & hys mayn oght wel be I-preysed.

[* Fol. 22
b.]

backt well
by Roger
le Poer,

Thegh many waṛ yn thys fyght that stalwarthly dydden, natheles, 16
Roger the power, that theṛ-aftyr was of grete myght yn Osserye &
yn the Contrey of leghlyn, was the otheṛ that best dydde. Aftyr

and at last
wins.

grete fyght & lange, þat theṛ was of wel vnlyche hostes, at þe laste
the Iresshe host was ouercome & I-scomfyte; many I-slawe by the 20
see strond whyder-ward they flowen: than was fulfilled a pro-
phecye that Colmkylle seyde of thys fyght: he seyde, 'that so many
meñ shold be I-slaw yn that place, that haṛ fomen myght waden to

His men
walk up
to their
knees in
Irish blood
on the
slimy
strand

the knees yn her blode.' & so hyt was than; ffor as thay flowen to-for 24
ham yn the slyme, thay folweden aftyr & slowen ham; & as thay
dyueden adoun, the blode of ham that wareñ I-slawe, & fleted
abouen, toke to þe knee of ham that slowen ham. The same

[¹ dyn..]

prophete seyde also, 'that a pouere mane, & as thocht he weṛ flow or 28
banshed out of otheṛ landes, *with* lytel folk shold come ynto doun¹,
& the toun wynne, wythout soccoure of any herrer'; & otheṛ many
fyghtes & aduentures of thynges that yn that contray shold betyde,

De Courci
has his
Victory
written in
Irish.

whych al openly weṛ fulfilled yn Iohñ de Courcy. That same 32
boke, Iñon hadde an Iresshe I-wrytte, & was hym ther-aftyr as
shewer of al hys dedys. In the same boke was eke I-found, that
a mañ *with* folke I-wepned shold, *with* strenynth, the walles of
Waterford to-breken; & *with* grette slaight of þe cytzeynes, the toun 36

men, bolde to fyght / and besegy boldely the Cite of down ther
 Ihon was In / For in this lond, as in al othyr, the nordryn men
 ben sturdier *and* smyrtyr to fyght than othyr. Ihon Saw the
 hostys comynge to-wardes hym, *and* chose; and lewyr was, out wende,
and wyth streynth to assay the aduentures of battayl, than in the
 lytel feble fortelet, that he in *and* herne of the toun in so lytel
 tyme hadd arrerid, amynd his enemys be be-segid, and to dey with
 hungyr. he went out to hard fight. and when thay had fryste,
 frome fer shote her arrowys, thay smytten aftyr hertely to-giddyr,
 spere agaynys spere, Swerde agaynys Spare; *and* many there the
 lyfe loste. But who had y-sey Ihonys strokys wyth Swerd, how
 he smote Of that man the hede frome the sholdris, that man the
 Arme and the shuldyr * frome the body, Hee myght wel Sey, that
 His myght and His mayn oght Wel to be Praysid. Thegh many
 wer in this fyght that boldely did, Natheles Rohere le Power, that
 ther-aftyr was of gret myght in Ossory and in the contrey of
 leghlyn, was the othyr that best did. Aftyr grete *and* lange
 fyghtynge of wel vnlych hostis¹, at the last, the Irysh hoste was
 ouercome *and* scomfited, *and* many slayne by the strondis syde
 whedyr thay flowe / than was fulfillid a prophesy that colmekyl²
 Sayde of this fyght. He sayde, 'that So many men sholde be slayn
 in that Place, that har enemys myght wadyn to the knees in her
 blode' / And so hit was than. For as thay fleddyn to-for ham in
 the Slyme, thay folwedyn aftyr and kyllid ham; and as thay
 dyuedyn done, the blode of ham that weryn slayne, *and* fletid
 abow, toke to the knees of them that ham Slayne. The same
 Prophet sayde also, 'that a pouere man, and as thegh he were flow
 or bashed but of othyr landys, with lytel folke sholde come to
 doune, and the toune wyne wyth-out Soccoure of any herrer'; and
 othyr many fightes and aduentures of thyng that in that contray
 sholde befall, whych al opynly wer fulfillid in Ihon de Cursy.
 That same boke, ther-aftyr had Ihon de Cursy on Irysh writte,
and was to hym ther-aftyr as merrowre of al his dedys. In pe
 sayde boke is also fovnde, that a man with pepil wepenyd, sholde
 with streynth the wallis of watyrford breke; *and* with grete slacht

*quam exili
 municipio,
 quod in
 urbis
 angulo
 tenuiter
 exererat.*

[*Fol. 22
 a.]

¹ *nimis
 impari
 certamine.
 per mari-
 num glisim.*
² *Hibernici
 Kolumbae.
 Prae glisii
 namque
 mollitie,
 dum ad
 ima pene-
 traret
 humana
 pondero-
 sitas,
 terrae
 lubricae
 sanguis
 profluus
 superfi-
 cium
 tenens,
 genua
 cruraque
 de socili
 pertinge-
 bat.*

A. D. 1177. wynd; & fro thennes, by Weysford, wend to dyuelyn *without* any
 St. Colum- lette; & þe cytè wyn: & al pis ys found fulfilled of the Erl: he
 ba's pro- seyde eke 'that the Cytè of lymeryke shold of Englysshe-men shold
 phicies fulfild by be twyes I-lefte, & at the thrydde tyme y-hold': & so hyt was, on 4
 De Courci. tyme of Reymond, another of phylepè de Bruse, as hyt openlyer shal
 be I-shewed yn hys own place. Ther-of þe prophecye was thys
 y-seyd, 'þe cytè thrise I-soght, at þe thryd tyme shal be I-hold.'

De Courci Twey grete fyghtes, Iohn ther ledde & wan at doun; that oon aftyr 8
 had Fights candelmase, as hyt ys I-told, þat other at mydsomyre, wher he, wyth
 1. and 2. at Down; fewe men, ouercome the battaylle of fyftene thousand, & slow of ham
 ful many. The þrydde was at ferly at a pray-takyng: thar thay
 3. at Fir- come throug a narowe pas, and hadde so styf fyght, & so stronge, that 12
 lee, where he was beaten; hys meñ was, some y-slawe, & the oper dele so dyscomfyte ynto
 al þe woddes, that vnneth ther be-left hym wyth aleueth
 thousande; & he, as man wonderly stalwarth, *with* so fewe wyth
 hym, whan thay hadde har hors I-loste, thay went a-fote al 16
 y-wepned: a xxx^{ti} myl weye thay helden the fyght of har fomen; &
 twey dayes & two nyght thay wañ fastyng, tyl thay come to hys
 4. at Uriel; castel. The ferth fyght was yn vryel; ther many of hys weren
 5. at Newry I-sley, & the oper descomfyte, & put ham to flyght: the fyfte at 20
 Bridge. yueres brygge, as he come wyth fewe men out of England;
 natheles, ther he ouercome, & slowe ful many, & come hol & sond to
 hys owne. Thus yn thre grete fyghtes he wan the ouer-hand;
 & yn twey, thegh he harme tholled, he dydde hys fomen mych 24
 more. Iohn was a man whyte & fayre; of lymmes bony & synowy;
 mych of body; non hardyer than he, stalwarth, & fyghter stronge of
 yought; yn euery fyght the fyrst, & the meste perrylle he wold
 * euer be In; he was so coueytouse of fyght, & so bernynge whan he 28
 hoste lad, & come to fyght, that he neuer wold hym hold as ledeñ,
 bot *wyth* the fyrst wold yn smyte, som whyle behynd, theñ most
 perrylle was, that oft al the oste was the vnredyñ, and thought that
 they wer ouercome, and al hadden forlore: & thegh he wer yn 32
 wepne vnmetly stordy, & sterne, out of wepne natheles, he was
 meke and sobre, & mych wyrshypped god & holy chyrche, & yn al
 thyng he leuet god and hys seruyce; & al that hym betyd, he
 thanked god that hym the grace sent. He spoused Godefreys 36

[*Fol. 23
 a.]

He loved
 fighting,
 and often
 attackt his
 foe in rear.

of the Citteseynes, the town wyn : And al this fund fulfillid of the Erle. He sayde also that the Cite of Iymerike, of Englysh-men twyes sholde be lefte, and the thyerde tyme sholde be holde. And So hit was, on tyme of Reymonde, a-nothyr of Phylip de bruse, as hit opynlyer shal be shewid in his owyn Place. Therof the prophesy was thus sayde : " The Cite thryse soght, at the thyerde tyme shal be holde," Two grete fyghtis, Ihon ther abode, and ham ouercomyd at doun / that oone aftyr candylmasse, as hit is tolde / that othyr, aftyr mydsomer, wher he, with few men, did ouercome the battail o xv. M^t, and Slayne of ham ful many. The thyrd was at ferly, at a pray takyn : thar thay come throw a narrow Paas, and had so styfe fyght, that his men was, some slayne, and othyr Part so descomfite in-to al the woddys, that vnneth with hym was lefte M^t ; and he, as man woundyryly bolde, with so few with hym, Whan thay hadd har hors loste, thay went afoote al wepenyd : xxx^{ti} myle wey thay heldyn the fyght of har ennemys ; and two dayes and two nyghtes thay wer fastynge, til thay come to his castel. the iiij^e fyght was in Vriel, ther many of his were slayn, and the othyr dyscomfite, and Put ham to flyght ; the v. fyght at yuores bryge, as he come with few men out of England. natheles, ther he ouercome, and slayne ful many, and come hole and Sounde to his owyn. Thus in thre grete fyghtis he had the ouer-hande ; and in two, thegh he loste the ouer-hand, he did his ennemys mych more // Ihon was a man whyte and fayre ; of lymmes, bony and * Synowy ; myche of Body ; noone Hardier than Hee ; Bolde, and fyghter stronge of youth : in euery fyght the fryst, and the meste peril he wolde euer be In / he was So covetouse of fyght, and So bernynge whan he hoste ladd, and come to fyght, that he hym neuer wolde holde as ledere, but with the fryste wolde smyte, Sumtyme be-hynnde, ther more Peril was, that ofte al the hoste was the vnredyer, and thoght that thay wer ouercome, and al haddyn for-lore. And thegh he were in wepyn vnmetly sturdy and Sterne, Out of wepyn natheles he was meke and sobyr, and mych vyrechippid god and holy church, and in al thyng he lowid god and his service ; and all that hym befel, he thankyd good that hym the grace sende. He Spousyd Godfredes doghtyr, the kyng

A. D. 1177.

ab Anglorum gente
bis descendam, et
tertio retinendam.

(June 24.)

in praedae
captione.

Ipsae vero,
vir virtutis
invictae,
cum tantilla
suorum
paucitate.

apud pontem
Ivori.

Descriptio
Iohann[is]
de Curcy.

[* Fol. 22
b.]

vir fortis
et bellator
ab adolescentia.

ducem
exuens, et
militem
induens.

in armis
immoderatus.

A. D. 1177. doghter, the kynges of Mane; & aftȳ many selcouth battaylles that
 At last, he dydde, nat wythout grete labour & perrylle of lyf & myche
 De Courci myssayse, at the last he was all aboue, & clenlych hadde ouercomen.
 all foes. He casteled the lond yn couenable places, & such pes made, that non 4

Not one of better ne myght be, ne stedfaster. Bot gret wonder ys, & nat bot
 the 4 great as god hyt wold, that thay four grete postès of the conquest of
 Pillars of Irland, namely, Robert steuenes-sonne, heruy of Mountynorthy,
 the Con- Reymon le Gros, and Ihon de Courcy, myhten neuer haue 8
 quest of Ireland had a child. children of her spoused wyues. Thus mych we haue shortly I-told
 of Ihon de Courcy; & the other parte of hys stalwarth gestes,
 we leueth to wryte to othē that ham wrytte wyllen, & turneth
 ayeine thē we afore lefte. 12

[CHAPTER XLVII.]

The Legate **W**iuyen, that in-to Irlande was legat I-comen,
 Vivian come to dyuelyn; theder he made come to-for
 holds a hym al the bysshoppes & the clergie of Irland & held hys sennc.
 Synod at ther he shewed openly the kynges ryght of Engelond to Irland, 16
 Dublin, & the popes graunt, & hys confyrmacion; &, vp mansynge, forbed
 March 13, lered & lewed, that non neuere so hardy to ccmen ayeyns the
 in Henry II's favour, & the popes graunt, & hys confyrmacion; &, vp mansynge, forbed
 lered & lewed, that non neuere so hardy to ccmen ayeyns the
 kynges trouth. & fore the Iresshe-men wer I-woned to doñ al
 har vytayllys yn chyrches, he yawe the Englysshe-men leue, that 20
 and gives the English leave to take food from churches. whañ me ladde hostes, & myghten nowhē elles wytayll fynd,
 that yn chyrch war I-found, me shold hardyly out take, & yeue
 the keepers of the chyrch the worth, as ryght wer.

[CHAPTER XLVIII.]

Miles de **A**ftȳr that, Miles de Cogan, that vnder Aldelinesse- 24
 Cogan with 500 men, invades Con-naught. sone was keper & conestable of dyuelyn, wyth fowrty
 knyghtes, of whych Rolf, Robertes sone, fytz-esteuene, was one,
 I-sette mayster ouer ham vnder Myles, & two hundret othē
 an hors, & thre hundret bowmen, passeden the water of shynnen, 28
 & wentten ynto Connaght, whā Englesshe-men was neuere er
 comen. The men of Connaght wer I-ware of har comes; thay
 drowen ham ynto erth-hous many; & al the vytaylle that thay
 ne myght nat take wyth ham, thay put yn chyrches; & tounnes & 32
 chyrches thay setten al afȳr & branten. & yn despyte of the En-
 glesshe-men, & yn hope þat god shold take wrech of ham, thay toke

The Irish take to earth-houses, and burn their buildings.

of man; *and* aftyr many Selchouth battalys that he did, not wyth-out grete laboure *and* Peril of lyfe *and* mych myssayse, And at the last he was al abow, *and* clenly hadd ouercome. He castelid the londe in behowabyll Placys; and Suche Pes made, that noone bettyr ne myght be, ne stydfastyr. But hit is grete wondyr, and not but as god hit wolde, that thay *iiij*^o grete Postes of the conqueste of Irland, Namely, Robert Steuenes-sonne, heruey of Mountmorthy, Reymond le gras / *and* Ihon de Cursy, myghten neuer haue childe of her Spousyd wyues / Thus mych we haue Shortely tolde of Ihon de Curcy; *And* the othyr Parte of his bolde gestis, we lewyth to write to otheres that ham write wille, *And* turnyth agayne ther we afere lefte.

[CHAPTER XLVII.]

VIuyen, that into Irland was legate, come to deuelyn: thedyr he made come to-for hym al the bischopis and the clergy of Irland, *and* helde his Senne. ther he Shewid opynly the kyngis ryght of England to Irland, and the Popis graunte and his confirmacion; *and*, vpon Payn of Cursynge chargid both lerrid and lewyd, that noone neuer so hardy to come agaynys the kyngis trouthe. *And*, for the Irysh-men wer wonyd to do al har vitalys in churchis, he yaue the Englysh-men leue, that whan thay ladd hostis, *and* myght no vyttalis ellys fynde, that that in church were founde, thay sholde hardely out-take, *and* yeue the keperes of the church the werthe, as ryght were.

[CHAPTER XLVIII.]

Aftyr that, Miles de Cogan, that vndyr aldelinee-sonne was keper and constabil of Deuelyn, with xl. knyghtes, of wych Rolfe, Robert-es sonne, fitz-Steuens, was one, y-sette Maystyr ouer ham vndyr Milis, and two C an hors, CCC bowmen, Passyd the watyr of Shynnyñ, *and* went Into Connaght / wher englysh-men was neuer therto-forne. The men of connaght wer y-ware of har comynge / ¹ they drew ham into Erthe-hous many; and al þ^e wyttalis that thay ne myght take with ham, they Put in churches; *and* touñes *and* churches thay sette afyre and brantyn¹. and in dyspyte of the englysh-men, *and* in trust that god wold do vengeance on ham, thay

A. D. 1177.

*tandem in
arce vic-
toriae
plene
constitutus.*

*hi grandes
expugna-
tionis
Hibernicæ
postes.*

*Capitulum
xlvij^m.*

*conuocatu
Dubliniæ
episco-
porum
synodo.*

*ad ecclesi-
arum
refugia
victualia
transfer-
rentur.*

*Capitulum
xlvij^m.*

¹*urbibus
undique et
villis igne
proprio
combustis;
alimentis
quoque
cunctis,
quæ
hypogeis
subter-
raneis
abscondere
non pote-
rant, simul
cum eccle-
siis igne
consumptis.*

A. D. 1177. þe rodes crucyfyed, & ymages of halowen, & kesten to-for ham ynto
 The English advance to Tuam, but find no food, and retreat safely to Dublin, beating King Roderic of Connaught on the way.
 þe rodes crucyfyed, & ymages of halowen, & kesten to-for ham ynto
 al the felde. The Englesse meygne wentten tyl they come to
 tuen, & ther̄ they abodde viij dayes yn bare lond & blote. And
 whan they myght no mane fynd, ne nothyng wher-by they myght
 lyue, they turned ayeine to the shynnen. ther̄ they found ayeins
 ham, Oconghour yn a wodde, wyth thre grete hostes. the Englesse
 boldly smytten vpon ham, & slowe of ham ful many, passeden on,
 & come to dyuelyn al sound, out-tak þre men, that yn that fyght
 were I-lefte.

[CHAPTER XLIX.]

Fitz-Audeline goes back to England. He got Jesus's Crosier to Dublin.
 [*Fol. 23 b.]
 Hugh de Laci and Robert le Poer come to Ireland.
 Miles de Cogan and Robert Fitz-Stephen get Cork. Philip de Bruse has Limerick.
 They force peace on Dermot Mac-Carthy, and divide the townlands near Cork.
 Sone ther̄ aftyr̄, Aldelinessone was I-sent aftir̄
 ynto Engelonde, that no good yn Irland dydde
 bot oon, that, by procuryng of hym, an holy baghell & of
 grete vertue, that me cleped Ihesus baghel, was I-brought
 from Ardmagh to dyuelyn, & yet ys at the chyrch of the Try-
 nyte: & come * ynto Irland Hugh de Lacy, heye Seneshal of al
 the lond, & Robert de Power wyth hym, Conestable of Water-
 ford. Myles de Cogan & Robert steuenesson wentten also ouer
 the see ynto Engeland; bot they comen sone ayeine, & phylepe
 de Bruse wyth ham; & hadde the kyng I-yeuen ham thre, al
 the lond of Desmond. Robert & Myles hadden the south Con-
 trey, that ys to wytten, from lysmore al aboute Corke vii
 Cantredes, saue the kyng the Cytè of Corke, wyth þe next
 cantrede. Phylype de Bruse, the kyng yaf al the Contrey of
 lymeryke, saue the Cytè & hys next cantred: these thre I-fefed
 to-gedde, come ouer ynto Irland yn o felewshyppe, & arryueden
 at Waterford, & fro thennes they wentten to Corke al harmles.
 They war̄ thar̄ fayr̄ receyued of þe Cytteyns, & of a knyght that
 was keper̄ of the Cytè, that hete Rychard of Londone. Whan
 they hadde I-brought to pees Demot Mac charthy, prynce of
 desmone, & other̄ many of the contrey of moche power, Robert and
 myles deled betwen ham the vij cantredes next the Cytè; & felle
 by lot¹ to Robert, thre on the eeste syde; Myles, four yn the weste;
 mo to the on than to the other̄, for the lond was wors; the keyng
 of the Cytè comunc to ham bothe; the renth & the trywage

¹ MS. bot.

toke the roodys crucyfied, *and ymagis of Sayntis, and kesten to-for* A. D. 1177.
 ham into al the feldys. The Englis-men wentyn tyl they come to ¹ *in hostili*
 tuem, And ther abode viij dayes in bare * Londe ande Blote ¹. And *terra.*
 When they myght no man fynde, ne nothyng Wherby they myght ^{[*Fol. 23}
 lyue, they turned agayn to the Shynnyn. ther they found agaynys *a.]*
 ham / Oconghoure in a wodde, *with* thre grete hostis. The *terram*
 englysh boldely smytten vpon ham, *and* Slow of ham ful many, *alimenti*
 Passyd ouer, and come to Deuelyn al sounde, out-take thre men *vacuam*
 that in that fyght weryn lefte. / *inueniens.*
tribus
tantum
arcuiss
amis-sis.

[CHAPTER XLIX.]

SOne theraftry, aldelines Sone was sende aftry in-to *Capitulum*
 England, that no good in Irland didde but oone, *xlix^m.*
 that, by *procuryng* of hym, an holy baghel and of grete Vertu, that *baculum*
 is callid *Iesus* ² baghel, was broght frome Ardmagh to Deuelyn, and *virtuosissi-*
 yet is at the Trynyte church // And come Into Irland Hugh de *um, quem*
 lacy, hey Seneschal of al the londe ³, And Robert de Power with hym *buculum*
 Constable of watyrford, Miles de Cogan *and* Robert S[t]euenes-Sone *Jesu*
 wentyn ouer the See also in-to England; but they comyn Sone *rocant.*
 agayn, and Philip de bruse *with* hame, and the kyng yeau ham *generalem*
 thre al the londe of Desmonde. Robert and Miles haddyn the *Hiberniae*
 South contrey, that is to Say, from lysmore al aboute Corke, vij^o *procurator-*
 candredes, Saue the kyng the Cite of Corke, *with* the nexte *to-*
 candrede; Philip de Bruse the kyng yeau al þe contrey of *Trans-*
 lymerik, Saue the Cite and his nexte Candrede: thes thre, feffyd *euntes*
 to-giddy, come ouer Into Irland in oo fellochipp, and londyn at *igitur in*
 Watyrford, and fro thens they wenten to Corke al harmeles. They *Hiberniam*
 wer thar fayre rescewyd of the Citteseyns, and of a knyght that *meise*
 was keper of the citte, that was callid Richarde of london. Whan *Novembri,*
 they hadd broght to pees Dermot Maccarthy, Prince of Desmon, and *cum tri-*
 othyr many of the contrey of mych Powere, Robert and Miles delid *plici fa-*
 betwen ham the vij Candredes nexte the Cite; and fell by lotte to *milia, tres*
 Robert, thre on the Este syde; Miles fourē in the weste: mo to the *viri con-*
 on than to the othyr, for the londe was wors; the kepyng of the *foolati*
 Cite comyn to ham both. the rent and the triwage of the othyr *simul et*
 confoderati.

² Ihe, MS.

A Cantred of the other foū & xx cantredes, as hyt wold falle, euyn to dele
 is 100 townlandz. betwen ham: & ys a cantrede to sygge, an hundret tōnd lond.
 Robert Fitz-Stephen, Miles de Cogan, and Philip de Bruse go to Limerick. Philip ought to attack Limerick, but funks it, and retreats: he has such a set of scamps in his force.

Whān thys was I-dōn, thay wentten wyth Phelype to lymeryke.
 Robert hadde wyth hym xxx^{ti} knyghtes & lx^{ti} sweynes; Myles, xx^{ti} 4
 knyghtes & fyfty squyers; Phelype, xx^{ti} knyghtes & xl^{ti} squyers;
 & fotmen wyth euery of ham ful many: they came to the Cytè,
 & noght was betwēn ham bot the watyre of the shynēn;
 & Robert & Myles baden Phylepe to wend ouer & assaylle the 8
 toun; othyr, yf hym leuer wēr, to rēr hym a castele vpon the
 same watyre afor the toun. Phelype, thegh̄ he knyght wer
 stalwarth & hardy yn hym selue, natheles, throḡh feble consaylle
 of ham that wyth hym, wēr he chase; & mych leuer hym was, leue 12
 the Contrey, & harmles turne ayeyne to hys ow̄n, Than amonge
 so many fomēn & so fer londes, yn so grete perrylle to abydde;
 & that no wonder̄ nas, thegh̄ hym yn thyke vyage mys byfelle,
 that so many lyddēr men, theues, & manslaghtres of the marche 16
 of Wales—and thay to-fore al other—hadde I-chose & I-draw to
 hys felewshyppe. Noght lange ther-aftyr, Meredus, Robertes sone,
 yonge knyght & stalwarth, nat wyth-out myche wepynge & sorow
 of many, deyed yn the Cytè of Corke. That whylle, was I-hold 20
 at Rome the consaylle of latran, that mēn so moche speketh of,
 vonder the pope Alyxsandȳr the thyrdde. & was wyth-yn thre
 yer̄, thre eclipyses of the sone. ¶ Whān Robert steuenessōn &
 Myles of Cogane, wel fyfe yeyr, al desmone yn good pees haddēn 24
 to-gyddyr I-holde, Myles & hys Othome Rauf, Robertes sōn,
 that a lytyll ther-to-fore hadde hys doghtēr I-spoused, wentten
 to the contrey of lysmor, to hold parlement wyth ham of
 Waterford. & as thay satēn yn the feldes abydyngge aftyr ham, 28
 Mactyr, that theder was wyth ham I-come, & wyth whom thay
 sholdēn that nyght¹ be I-herbrowed, vnwytyngly smot vpon
 ham behynd, & ham both, wyth fyue other̄ knyghtes, thēr slown
 wyth sparthes; & other̄ fewe that wer wyth ham vnneth escaped. 32
 Throḡh that thyngge, al the contrey forth thēr-aftyr̄ worth so
 I-storbet, that Demot Maccarthy & al the hegh men of * the
 contray, forth wyth Mactyre, ayeyne har trouth, wyth-drowēn ham

¹ MS. myght.

The Council of Lateran, March 1179, 3 eclipses in 3 years

Miles de Cogan and his son-in-law go to Lismore,

and are treacherously slain, by Mac Tire.

The Irish [* Fol. 24 a.] then rebel.

foure and xx^{ti} candredes, as hit wolde falle, euen to dele be-twen
 ham // And a Candrede is as myche to Say as, an hundrid toun- Quid est
candreda.
 londe // Whan this was don, thay wentyn with Philip to Lymeryke. tanta
 Robert had wyth hym xxx^{ti} knyghtes and xl. Squyeres ; Miles, xx^{ti} terroe
portio,
 knyghtes, l. Squyeres; and Philip, xx. knyghtys and xl. Squyeres; and quanta
centum
 footmen with euery of ham ful many. Thay came to the Cite, and villas
continere
solet.
 noght was betwen ham but the watyr of the Shynnyu. And Robert
 and Miles badyn Philip wende ouer, and assayle the toun ; Othyr,
 yf hym leuer were, to rere hym a castel vpon the same watyr afor
 the toun. Philip, thegh he was knyght bolde and hardy in hym-Selfe,
 natheles, ¹through febil consail of them that wyth hym, were he chose ;
 and myche leuer hym was, leue the contrey, and harmeles turne
 agayn to his owyn, Then amonge so many enemys, and in so fere
 londys, in So grete Peril to abyde ¹. and that no wondyr nas, thegh
 hym in thylke vyage mys-be-felle, that ² So many wyckyd men, con-
 dicones and manequellers of the marche of Walis (and thay to-for
 al othir) hadd y-chose and y-draw to his fellochipp. Not longe
 theraftr, Meredus, Rober[t]es-sone, yonge * Knyght and Bolde, not
 with-out mych wepyng and Sorrow of many, Dyed in the Cite of
 Corke. That tyme, was holde at Rome ³ the consail of latran, that
 men of mych Spekyth, vndyr the Pope Alysandyr the thyrde. and
 was within iij^e yere, iij^e Eclipsis of the Sonne ⁴. Whan Robert
 Steuenes-Sone and Miles de Cogan, wel v^e yere al Desmond in good
 pees hadden to-gaddyr holde, Miles, and his Sone-in-law, Raufe,
 Robert-es Sone, that a lytel thertofore to his doghtyr had spousid,
 wenten to the contrey of lysmore, to holde Parlement with ham of
 watyrforde. and as thay Satyn in the feldys abydyng aftyr ham, Mac-
 tyre, that thedyr with hame was come, and with whome thay sholde
 be that nyght logide, Vnwyttyngly Smote vpon ham ; and ham both,
 wyth v. othyr knyghtes, thay Slayn wyth Sparres; and othyr few that
 were with ham, vnneth escapid. Throught that thyng, al the contrey
 was in were, So that Dermot Maccarthy and al the hey men of the
 Contrey forth with Mactyre, agayne har trouth, withdrawen al frome

¹⁻¹ pusilla-
 nimi tamen
 snorum
 consilio.
 potius
 indemnis
 ad sua
 reverti,
 quam in
 terra tam
 hostili
 tamque
 remota
 fortunae
 tentare
 pericula
 praelegit.

[* Fol. 23
b.]

² viros
 homicidas,
 seditiosos
 ac flagi-
 tiosos.

³ sedit
 Romae.

⁴ non
 generales
 tamen, sed
 partiales.

A. D. 1182.

improvisis
 a tergo
 securium
 ictibus sunt
 interempti.

A. D. 1182. al from the Englysshemeñ, & turned vpoñ Robert steuenes-sonne, that oft hadde harde happes assayed; & neuer eft, tyl Reymond Robert Fitz-Stephen is to hym come, and helpe hym for to wyn the londe & worth to attackt by herytage; ffor Robert ne myght nat pees haue, as he rather hadde. 4
 Irish rebels. As the northren me[n] loueth fyght, also the southren, falsness; (The North Irish are true, and fight; the South are false, and trick.) thay trusteth to streynth, these to sleghtes; thay to staluarthnesse, these to traysoune. Whan Reymond herd that Robert was so narow byladde yn the toun of Corke, wyth hys fomen al 8
 about beseget, he put hym to shyppe yn the hauen of Watyrford, wyth xx^{ti} knyghtes & squyers, & bowmeñ, wel ccc; leftene the Reimund Fitz-Gerald sails to Cork to help him. lond al oñ the ryght hond, & wentten about by the see, fort he come to Cork, to gaddre hele to hys frendes, & vnhele to hys 12
 fomen. Aftyr many & selcouth camplynges, many of hañ fomeñ thay slow, & many out of contray thay dryueñ, & the moste parte & the beste come to pees; & so the grete tempeste of that weddyñ hape, yn lytel whyle was I-queynt & I-styled. 16

They put down the rebellion.

A. D.
1182-3.

[CHAPTER L.]

There come to Ireland, Richard de Cogan in 1182; and in 1183, Philip de Barry, and Giraldus Cambrensis, who wrote 3 books on Ireland.

Hervey of Mountmaurice turns monk.

Nat longe ther̄ aftyr̄, come into Irland Richard de Cogan, Miles brother, wyth fair̄ meygne from the kynge I-sent; & ther̄-aftyr̄, yn the begynnyge of Marce, come Phylpe de barry, a mañ slegñ & staluarth, wyth moch 20
 folk & fayr̄, both for to help Robert & Reymond, & foñ to castely hys lond of Olethane, whych Robert hym hadde I-yeue; and yn the same flot come Maystyñ Geraud, that phelypees brother̄ & Robertes neuue, ful good clerk, & a mañ that al the 24
 conqueste, & þe state, & þe wondres of Irland, & the kyndes of pepel from the begynnyge, ful Inly soght & oft greped, & thre bokes ther̄-of maked wyth grete trauayl, fywe yeñ that he was ther̄. about that tyme, heruy of Mountnorthy yeldet hym monke 28
 at crystes chyrch yn cantyrbery, to whych he hadde thar-to-forne I-yeue hys chyrches of hys lond be Waterford & Weysford. Wold god that he hadde I-chaunget hys culuertnesse and he dydde hys knyghthode, and trecherye as he dydde hys 32
 clothynge¹.

¹ Qui utinam sicut habitum, sic et animum, sicut militiam sic et malitiam deposuisset.—*Gir. Camb. Op. v. 352.*

the Englysh-men, and turned vpon Robert Steuenes-Sone, that ofte had harde Aduenturis assayed ; and neuer este, til Reymond to hym come *and* helpyd hym forto wyn the londe *and* broght to heritage ; For Robert ne myght not pees haue, as he radyr hadd. As the northeryn men lowyth fyght, also the Southeryn, falsnys : ¹ thay trustyth to Streynth, thes to sleghtes ; thay to boldnys, thes to traysone ¹ // When Reymonde herd that Robert was So narrow by-ladde in the toun of corke, wyth his Ennemys al about besegid, he Put hym to shipp in the hawyn of watyrword *with* xx. knyghtes and Squyeris *and* bow-men wel CCC, leften the londe al on the ryght hande *and* wentyn aboute by the Sec, fort he come to corke, to grette gladnys to his frendis, *and* Sorrow to his ennemys. Aftyr many *and* selcouth Camplyngys, many of har ennemys thay haue Slayne, *and* many out of contray thay dryuen ; and the meste Parte *and* the beste come to Pees ; and So the grete tempeste of that weddyr hapid, in lytil whyle was broght to an ² ende. /

[CHAPTER L.]

NOt longe ther-aftyr, come Into Irland Richard de Cogan, Miles-is brothyr, *with* fayre maynyn frome the kynge y-Sende, and ther-aftyr, in the begynnyng of Marce, come Philip de barry, a man sley and bolde, wyth mych pepill *and* fayre, forto helpe both Robert *and* Reymond, and forto castel his londe of olethane, whych Robert hym hade yeue. And in the same flytte come Maystyr Geraude, that Philippes brodyr and Robert-is Eme, ful good clerke, *and* a man that al the conquest *and* the state and the wondris of Irland, and the kynde of Pepill from the begynnyng, ful Inwardly soght, and thre bokys therof makyd wyth grette trauayll, v. yere that he was ther-aboute // About that tyme, Heruey of Montmorthy yeldyd hym monke at crystes church in cantyr-berry, to whych he had therto-forne yeue his churchis of his lond betwen Watyrforde * And Weysforde. Wolde god that he hadd y-chaunged His culuertnesse as he didd his knyghthode, and his trayson as he didd his clothyng //

A. D. 1182.
donec Reimundus, in hereditatem patris Stephanidae succedens, urbis custodiam solus obtinuit, [nec tunc plene] pristinum pacem recuperavit.

A. D. 1182.

Capitulum 1.

A. D. 1183.

et alius Stephanidae nepos Philip-pique frater, tum avunculum quam fratrem plurimum consilio iuans.

[*Fol. 24 a.]

¹⁻¹ Illa laudis, haec fraudis cupida ; illa Martis, haec artis ope confisa ; illa viribus nititur, haec versutiis ; illa praeliis, haec proditiionibus.—Op. v. 350.

² and, MS.

A. D. 1177.

Hugh de
Laci castles
Leinster
and Meath,and makes
such peace
that men
till their
land.He so
attracts
the Irish,
that he is
suspected
of aiming
to be their
King.

A. D. 1181.

John,
Constable
of Chester,
and
Richard de
Pec arrive.
[* Fol. 42
b.]Many
castles
are built.Meiler
Fitz-Henry
gets Kil-
dare, but
changes it
for Leix.

The while that this was thus in Desmone I-done,
 Hugh de Lassy, as man that queynth was &
 staluarth, both leynester & meth¹ nobely casteled, & yn many
 places ther other faylled to-fōr hym; & fayn was about, to setten 4
 yn hār londes, Thay that wyth streynth & vnryghtly werend out
 I-dryue, both englysshe & Iresshe; so that, yn lytyll stond, was
 so good pees that men arreden & tylleden hār londes, and the
 lond ynto al wel I-stored wyth corne. he drogh̄ to hym 8
 slegthlych, wyth wyrsshype doynge, & stydfaste forward makyng,
 the heghest of the lond folk; from place to place byled the
 lond wyth castel; & yn lytyll whyll, so good pees made, toke
 of othēr, & auauuced hys owne ryuely, & rych ham maked. 12
 The folk of Irland, wyth frenesse & sleghtes, drogh so, & allyed
 to hym, that men hadden grete ortrow vpon hym, that he, ayeyne
 the kyng & hys owne trouth, wold make hym self kyng I-crouned
 of the lond. As thys was, & mych spech yn []² of thys 16
 thyng, comon ynto Irland twey knyghtes from the kyng I-sent,—
 that oon heet Ihon, the conestabel of chestre, & that othēr,
 Rychard of the pek,—for to receyue the kepyng of Irland, & that
 hugh̄ shold wend ouer ynto Englund to the kyng; both hār³ he 20
 ouer went, by comyn red of ham al, thay arreden yn that
 somȳr many castells yn leynester; ffor ār that, Myth * was wel
 castelled, & leynestre bot lytyl. Thār pay reredend a castel to
 Reymond, yn forthred Onolan; Another to Gryffyne hys brother; 24
 the thyrde, yn Omurthy, to Water de rydlesford a kylka; the ferth,
 to Iōhn the herford, at Tyllagh yn felmeth, & other many.
 Meyller hadde that tyme kyldār of the erles yifte, & the contrey
 about; bot that me toke of hym for oo coste, & yaf hym pe 28
 contray of leys as yn chaunge. for hyt was smert lond, woddy,
 & of Marche, & ferr, me sette hym thār as man of marche,
 that I-nowe couth theron.

¹ MS. moch.² Space left for a word. A later hand has written something which is illegible. The Latin has only 'fama': see opp. and Gir. Camb. *Op.* v. 355.³ but ere: Sed antequam.

[CHAPTER LI.]

The Whyle that this was thus done in desmond, Capitulum
Ijm.
 Hugh de Lacy, as man that sly was *and* bolde, Hugo vero
de Luci,
summa
 both leynyster and myth nobely he castelid, and in many Places
 ther othyr falid to-for hym ; *and* fayne was aboute to Settyn in har
 londes, solicitu-
dine, victos
ab aliis,
 That that wyth Streynth *and* vnryght / were out-drywe,
 both Englysh and Irysh, et violenter
a finibus
 So that, in lytel whyle, was So good Pees
 that men Erredyn *and* tilledyn har landys, *and* the lond Into al
 wel Storid with corne. he drew to hym Slyly, ejectos, ad
pacem
revocans,
 with wyrchipp
 doynge and Stidfast forward makynge, the heghest of the lond-
 Pepyll ; eisdem
olim
and frome Place to Place byled the lound with castelis ;
deserta
tam
armentis
 and in lytyll Whyle, so good Pees made, toke of othyr, *and*
 auauanced his owyn ryuely, *and* ryche ham made. The Pepill of
pascua,
quam
ruricolis
rura
restituit.
 Irland, wyth frenes *and* sleghtes, drow So, *and* allied to hym, that
 men haddyn grete exstymacion vpon hym, that he, agayn the kyng
 and his owyn trouth, wolde make hym-Selfe kyng y-crowned of the
 londe. As this was, *and* mych Spech in taale of thys thyng, comen
et prae-
notatae
suspicionis
fama cre-
brescente.
 Into Irland, two knyghtes from the kyng y-sende : that oone was
 callid Ihon, the Constabill Of cestre, and that othyr, Richarde of the
 Peke, forto rescue the keynge of Irland ; and that hugh Sholde
 wend ouer Into Englande, to the kyng. but ar he ouer wente, by
 comyn assente of ham all, thay arreredyn in that Somer many
 castelys in leynyster ; For ar that, Mythe was well castelid, and
 leynyster but lytell. Thar thay reredyn a castell to Reymond in
 fothred o nolan¹ ; Anothyr to gryffyn his brodyr ; the thyrd in²
 Omurthy, to water de redelesford at kylka ; the iijie. to Ihon the
 herford, at Tillagh in felmeth, *and* othyr many. Meylere hadd that
 tyme kyldare of the Erlis yfte, and the contrey about ; but that thay
 toke of hym for oo Purpos, *and* yaue hym the contray of leys in
 change. for hit was wille londe *and* woddy, *and* of Marche, *and*
 ferre, thay sette hym there as man of Marche, þat y-now kouth
 theron.

¹ MS. to. Lat. : tertium in Omurethi, Gualtero de Ridenesfordia, apud Tristerdermoth ; quartum Johanni de Clahulla super aquam Beruae, non procul a Lechlinia : quintum Johanni Herefordensi apud Collacht.—Op. v. 355.

[CHAPTER LII.]

A. D.
1181-2.

Hugh de Lacy is sent back to rule Ireland; and John of Salisbury with him. He builds Castles.

When this was I-donð, in the somyr Hugh wente owr̄ in-to Engelande. Ayeyne the wyntter the kyng toke of hym sykernesse, & sent hym sone ayeine kepēr of Irland, as he rather was sette; wyth hym a clerk, Robert of slepsbery¹, that shold hym be an help & consaylle, & wytnes of hys deddes. At thys comynge, huḡh arered manye castells: On to Meyller at tachmeho, & thañ he yaue hym hys nece to wyue; another thā neḡh, yn Oboy, to Robert de Byga; & 8 other many, both yn leynestre & yn Myth, that longe hyt wār to namy al by name.

[CHAPTER LIII.]

Nota de lupo confitente.

A priest is askt to shrive a sick woman.

He finds a sick wolf,

who talks to him:

he shrives her.

Forthesins of the Irish, God turnd her into a wolf.

About that tyme, befel a wonder aduentur̄ yn a wodde of Myth, of a preste that yede by weyes; 12 & as he come throḡh that wodde, come a man̄ ayeyns hym, & badde hym, for goddys loue, that he shold wend wyth hym for to shryue hys wyf, that lay seke per neḡh. The preste turned wyth hym; & whañ he come somdel neḡh, he herd gronyng 16 and wonyng, as theḡh hyt wēr of a womañ; & whañ he come ryght to, thañ was hyt a wolf that lay ther & groned. Þe preste that saw, & was wel sore aferd, & turned hym awayward: the man̄ and the wolfi both spake to hym, & bad hym that he ne 20 shold nat be adredde, & that he shold turne to shryue hȳr. The preste than toke herth to hym, & blessyt hym, & yede sytte besyde hȳr: & the wolf spake to hym, & shroue to þe preste. & whañ thay hadde þat I-donð, þe preste bethoght hym, and thoght that 24 thyng that was forshape, & hade gras to spek, that hyt myght also wel haue grace & ynsyght of other thyng. he sette to, & asked of the out-comeñ men that ynto the lond wēr comen, howe hyt shold be of ham. The wolf answard & seyde, that 'for the syñ 28 of þe lond-folke, almyghty gode tok wreche of ham, & sent that folk for to bryng ham yn thraldome; & so thay shold be tyl the same folk wār efte encombret whyth² syñ; & than thay shold haue power for to done ham the same wrech, fōr hār 32 synnes.'

¹ I. e. salopsbery, Salisbury.² MS. whych.

[CHAPTER LII.]

WHan this was done, In the Somer Hugh went Capitulum liij^m.
 ouer Into England. agayn the Wyntyre, the A. D. 1181-2.
 kyngge toke of hym Surte, and sende hym Sone agayn kepere of
 Irland, as he to-for was. Sende with hym a clerke, Robert of Roberto... Salopes-
 Slepsbery, that to hym sholde be helpe and consayl, and wytnes of buricensi
 his dedis. At this comynge, Hugh lette make many castelis. On
 to Meyler at tachmeho, and than he yaued hym his deth to rescuew [!] cui et
 Anothyr thar ney, in Oboy, to Robert de Bigaz; and Othyr many, neptem
 both in leynystere and in Myth, that longe hit were to reherse ham suam tunc
 al by name. dedit
uzorem.

[CHAPTER LIII.]

About that tyme, befel a merwelos aduventure in Capitulum liij^m.
 a wodd of Myth, of a Preste that went by weyes. Nota de
 And as he came throw that wodd, came a man agaynes hym¹, and lupo con-
 Prayed hym for the lowe of god, that * He sholde go wyth Hym fitente.
 forto shrywe Hys wyfe, that Lay seke ther-By. The prest turned *Fol. 24
 wyth hym; and whan he came Somdel ney, he herde gronyng b.]
 and con-Playnyng, as hit were of a woman; and whan he came [See Gir.
 there wher she lay, than was hit a wolfe, that lay there and Camb.'s
 gronyd. the prest that Saw, and was sore aferde, and turnyd hym Topo-
 to goo / the man and the wolfe both spake wyth hym, and bade graphia,
 hym that he sholde not be afferde, and that he sholde turne to ch. 19, Op.
 shryw hyre. The Prest toke herte to hym, and blessid hym, and v. 101; it
 wente and satte be-syde hyre. And the Wolfe spake to hym, and gives the
 confeste hyr to the preste. and whan thay hadd that done, the preste story, with
 bethoght hym, and thoght that thyngge that was in myse-lyckenys, different
 And hadd grace to speke, that hit mygh[t] also wel haue grace and details.]
 Insyght in othyr thyngge. He enquerid of the strangeres that were ² Sin
 come Into londe, how hit sholde be of ham? The wolfe answerid autem,
 and sayde, that 'for the synne of the londe-pepil, almyghty god was quia pro-
 displeysd wyth ham, and sende that Pepill to bryngge ham in clivis est
 thraldome; and So thay sholde be, thil the Same Pepill were aftyr cursus ad
 encombrid wyth Synne². And then thay sholde haue Power to do voluptates,
 to ham the Same Wrechydnys, for har Synnes.' et imita-
trix natura
ritiorum,
ad nostros
ex courectu
mores forte
descen-
derint,
dirinam in
se quoque
procul-
dubio
vindictam
provoca-
bunt.

¹ ecce lupus ad eos accedens. Gir. Camb. Op. v. 101.

[CHAPTER LIV.]

A. D.
1180-6.
Henry II's
sons again
rebel.

Nat longe theſe-aftyſ, þe yonge kyng henry, the old kyng henryes ſone, & his brother Geffrey, the Erl of bretaynge, wyth-out many hegh men of thys half þe ſee, and yen half that ham weren an help & conſaylle, the thyſde tyme ayeyne hys fader begaṅ to aryſe; bōt ſone theſe-aftyſ, as thegh hyt wē throgh wrech of god, thay bothe deyeden, the on about mydsomyſ at Marcelle—& þat was the yonge kyng,—& þe erl ſone theſe-aftyſ deyed eke at parys: and thys þe kynges werē 8 ayeynes his¹ ſones was y-endet.

[CHAPTER LV.]

Prince
Henry
dies,
11 June
1183:
Geoffrey
dies
19 Aug.
1186.

St. Laur-
ence,
Archbp. of
Dublin,
dies at Eu
14 Nov.
1180,
[*Fol. 25
a.]

WNder this, laurence, Erchebiſſhope of Dyuelyne, (that at the conſaylle of the laſtran hadde I-be, & as me ſeyde, ther he hadde purchaſed ayenyſ the kyng for loue of hys lond-folke, whar-of the kyng hadde grete ortrow vp-on hym, wheſe-foſ he lete hym of hys paſſage ynto Irland,) the xvij kalends of december, deyed at Oye yn nor-mandy; a good mane and holy; & þat, gode almyghty ſheweth, by many myracles þat he openly doth for hym. Me eke of hym, that he was ſeke thre dayes ar he thader come; and whan he ſawe ouſ lady-chyrch, that ys the modyſ-chyrch of the town, he ſeyd thys vers of the pſauter, as prophecye, throgh þe holy goſte: ‘Hec Requies mea in *ſeculum ſeculi*’ et cetera: & ys thus mych to ſygge an-englyſſhe, ‘Thys ys my reſte, world wyth-out end; her I wyll wonne, for I hyt haue I-choſe.’

after
having
prophesied
his death
there.

John
Comin is
next Arch-
biſhop,
A. D. 1181.
He is con-
ſecrated at
Velletri,
A. D. 1182.

Aftyſ hym, was Erchebyſſhop of dyuelyne, Ihon comyn, a maṅ of England borne; & yn England, at eueſham, of the clergye of dyuelyṅ (by queyntiſe and *procurment* of the kyng), by on accorde I-choſe; & of the pope lucye, at the Cyte of Wellet, theſe-aftyſ I-hodet & I-ſacred; a man, good clerke & ryghtful; & by hys myght, mych ryght laked þe ſtat of holy chyrch yn Irland.

[CHAPTER LVI.]

Henry II
gives
Ireland to
his ſon
John.

The kyng henry, as he there-to-fore hadde I-thoght, yaue the Lond of Irland to hys yongeste ſone, Iohn by name; & whaṅ he hyt hadde hym I-yeuc,

¹ *overlined later.*

[CHAPTER LIV.]

Not longe ther-aftyr, the yonge kyng Henry, the olde kyng Henryes Sone, and his brodyr Geffery, the Erle of brytayne, with othyr many hey men of this halfe the see, and yen half that ham weryn an helpe and consayl, the thyrde tyme agayn his fadyr be-gan to arryse; but Sone ther-aftyr, as hit were through Sentence of god, thay both died, the one aboute Midsomyre at Marcelle, and that was the yonge kyng; and the Erle Sone ther-aftyr diede also at Paris: and thus the kynges werre agaynes his Sonnes was Endyd.

Capitulum
liij^m.

A. D.

1180-6.

*prae-
potentes
Pictaviae
proceres,
cum electa
Gallicae
militiae
juventute.*

[CHAPTER LV.]

Vndyr this laurance, Archebischope of Deuelyn, (that at the consail of the Latran hadd I-be, and as thay Sayde, ther he had Purchasid agaynes the kyng for loue of his londe-Pepill, wharof the kyng had grette artrow vpon hym, Wherfor he lette hym of his passage in-to Irland,) the xvij kalends of Decembyr died at Oye in Normandy, a good man and holy, and that god almyghty Shewid many Miraclis for / that he opynly doth for hym. We rede also of hym, that he was seke iij^e dayes ar he thadyr came; and whan he Saw our Ladyes church, that is the modyr church of the toun, he sayde this vers of the Sawter, as prophesy throw the holy goste: "Hec requies mea in *seculum seculi*: Hic habitabo¹, quoniam elegi eam." And is thus mych to Say in Englysh, "This is my reste, worlde wythout Ende. Her y wyl dwele, for y hit haue chose" // Aftyr hym, was Archebischope of Deuelyn, Ihon Comyn, a man of England borne; and in England, at euesham, of the clergi of deuelyn (by queyntyse and procurment of the kyng), by oone acorde chose; and of the Pope Lucie, at the Cite of wellet, ther-aftyr y-hodet and y-Sacrid; a man, god clerke, and ryghtful, and by his myght / mych ryght lakyd the state of holy church In Irland².

14 Nov.
1180.

A. D. 1181.

*2 eccliesiae
Hibernicae
statum
egregie
subli-
masset.*

[CHAPTER LVI.]

The kyng Henry, as he there-tofor hadd thocht, yaue the londe of Irland to his yongest Sone, Ihon by Name. And whan he hit hadde hym yeue, he Sende the Arche-

Capitulum
lvj^m.

[Fol. 25

a.]

¹ habitabo, MS.

A. D. 1184. he sent þe Erchebysshope of dyuelyn ouer þe see, to ordeyn ayeayne Archbp. Comin is sent to Ireland; Hugh de Lacy is recald, and Philip of Worcester takes his place. He took tallage of all, and curses with it.

he sent þe Erchebysshope of dyuelyn ouer þe see, to ordeyn ayeayne hys sones comynge. & sone aftyr þat, hugh de lassy was I-sent aftyr ynto Englund; and come ynto Irland, Phelype of Wyrcestre, procurato[ur] of þe lond, wyth fourty knyghtes; a man that was 4 good knyght, curteys, & good mete-yeuer; bot oper good ne dydde he noon, saue þat he went from contray to contray, & asked, & wyth streynth toke, both of letred & of lewed, þe cursed tallages of gold & of syluer. & I wnderstond that he neuer good 8 dydde þerwyth; ne neuer mane shalle, that so catell gadereth; for many crystes curs, & trew mannys & womannes, pouer & ryche, thay gadereth eke þer-wyth: & wel vnwyker may mañ be, to do hys lyf yn aduentur wyth ham that catel so wynnethe. 12

[CHAPTER LVII.]

The fyrst comynge of kynge Iohn ynto Irland. He lands at Waterford 25 April, 1185.

Those who conquer the land before him deserve all praise.

Nota the kyng his tytle to Irland.

Fitz-Stephen and Striguil had good right to come to Ireland.

Whan the kynges sone hadde arayed al dyngge that nede was, for to come yn-to Irland, he put hym to saylle at Melyford, a ferth estre day. he hadde good wynd, & a-morow arryued at Waterford, wyth thre hun- 16 dret knyghtys, & other an-hors, & a-fote ful many. he arryued, the yer of hys old .xxij.; of hys faderes comynge ynto Irland .xiiij.; of the Erles comynge .xiiij.; of Robertes comynge, fytz-steuenes .xv.; the yee of owr lordes Incarnacion .M. C. lxxxv. 20 Steuenes-sone was forman, & opened the way to þe Erl; the Erl to þe kyng; the kyng to hys sone; & mych hyt ys to preyse, & grete thyng he began, that fyrste ynto Irland so boldly come, the thyng to begyn. Moch also to preysene, he, that 24 aftyr the begynnyng, so nobely come for to eche thyng that was begon; & most of al to preysen, he that al thyng fulle endet, & the lordshype clenlych wan ouer al other [Hy. II]. Heñ, men mowen well vndrestond, that the Englesshy-meñ ne came nat 28 wyth so mych vnryght yn-to Irland as many folk weneth; for Robert, steuenes-sone, & þe Erl, wyth good ryght come to Macmorgñ ynto leynester; the on, hys trouth for to hold, & hym for to helpe; that other, for loue of hys doghtre; nathles, of 32 Waterford, ne of Myth, ne of Desmoñ, whych the Erl at the begynnyng name to hym, & conquered out of leynestrec, ne sey I nocht that he hadde al fully ryght ther-to. Bot of the fyft

bischope of Deuelyn ouer the see, to ordeyn agayn his comynge. A. D. 1184.
 And Sone aftyr that, hugh de Lacy was Sende¹ into England; And
 come Into Irland, Philipp of Wircestre, procuratour of the londe, [Philip,
 in his
 expedition
 to
 Armagh,]
 a clero
 with fourty knyghtes; a man that was good knyght / curteys, and
 goode mete-yeuer; but othyr good ne did he noone; Saue that he
 went from contray to contray, and askyd, and wyth streynth toke, sacro uuri
 tributum
 execrabile
 tam
 erigens
 quam
 extorquens.
 both of lerid *and* lewid, the cursid tollagis of golde and Syluer.
 And I vndyrstonde that he neuer good did ther-with; ne neuer man
 shall, that So good gadderid; for many crystis curs, *and* trew manys
and womannys, Pouer and rych, thay gadderid also ther-wyth: and
 wel vnsure may a man to be, to do his lyfe in aduenture wyth them
 that So goode doth gette. —Op. v.
 360.

[CHAPTER LVII.]

Whan the kynges Sone hadd arrayed al thyng Capitulum
 lvij^m.
 that nede was forto come Into Irland, he Putt hym
 to Sayl at Milleford the iiij^e day aftyr Estyr. He had good wynde, The fryst
 comyng of
 kynge
 Ihoñ Into
 Irlande.
and amorrow londid at Watyrforde, wyth CCC knyghtes, *and* othyr
 an-hors *and* a-foote ful many. he londyd, the yere of his age xxij,
 Of his faderis comynge Into Irlande xiiij, Of the Erlis comynge
 xiiij, of Roberes comynge fitz Steuyñ xv, the yere of Oure lordys
 Incarnacioñ M^r. Clxxxv. Steuenes Sone was the fryst man, [Op. v.
 38²]
 And oppenyd the wey to the Erle: the Erle to the kynge; the kynge to
 his Sone; *and* gretly he is to Preyse, *and* grete thyng he began, that Multum
 ergo con-
 tulit qui
 ausu nobili
 princi-
 pium
 dedit.
 fryst in-to Irland So boldely come, the thyng to begyn; gretly also
 he is to Preyse, that, aftyr the begynnyng, so nobely come forto
 execute the thyng that was begon; *And* moste of al he is to
 Preyse, that al thyng full Endyd, *and* the lorchip clenly conquestyd
 ouer al othyr // Here men mowen wel vndyrstond, that the Eng- Nota the
 kyngys
 titil to
 Irlande.
 lish-men came not wyth so mych vnryght into Irland as many
 pepill wenyth. For Robert Steuenes-Sone *and* the Erle come to
 Macmurgħ into leynystre; that oon, on his throuth forto holde, *and*
 hym forto helpe, / that othyr, for loue of his doghtyr. Natheles, of
 Watyrford, ne of Mythe, nethyr of Desmon, wych the Erle at the
 begynnyng toke to hym *and* conquerid out of leynystre, I Sey not ² quintae
 portionis
 insulae.
 that he hadd ful ryght therto. But of the fryst Parte of the londe ²

¹ Sende aftyr, MS.

Henry II's
fivefold
right to
Ireland:

1. All the
Irish
Princes
yielded to
him.

[*Fol. 25
b.]

2. The
Pope of
Rome
granted
Ireland to
him.

3. Gur-
guntius
won
Ireland.

4. Arthur
had truage
from
Ireland.

5. The
Irish came
from
Bayonne,
subject to
England.
English
kings are,
of right,
Lords of
Ireland.

Nota that
Iresshemēn
bene false
of kynd.

Giraldus
says no
more of
the Con-
quest, but
explains
why it was
never com-
pleted.

parte of the lond that was the Erles throg̃h hys wyf, The lordshype clenly þe erl yaf the kyng; & al þe prynces of the lond ther-aftyr, by har good wyll, yolden ham to the kyng, to be euermõr sugget to hym & to hys. Vp*-on al thys, þe pope of 4 Rome, that ys heede of al crystendome, and that hath a specyall ryght of al the Ilondes of crystendome as wyde as the world ys, he yaf plenerly, and confermed to the kyng, the lordshyp of the lond, as hyt ys to-fore I-told. and of eldre ryght we 8 syndeth eke I-wrytte, that the kynges of England haue to Irland of Germoñ, Belynes sone, kyng of Brytaygne, that ys nowe Englund, he come ynto Irland, & whan the lond; & many yẽr me bãr hym truage, and other̃ astỹr hym, ynto brytaygne. 12 Ther-aftyr the kyng Arthũr hadde truage eke out of Irland; & Gylmory the kyng, that thañ was wyth other kyng of the Ilondes, was wyth hym at the grete feste that he held at karlyõn. Oñ other halue, the folk of Irland come formeste out of bastles 16 & out of Bayõn, that longeth now to gascoyne, wherof the kynges of england ben lordes. And thys me may wel vnderstond, that both by old ryght & by newe, the kynges of Englund owen wel to haue the lordshyp of Irland. And thegh̃ the folk of the lond 20 neuer ne hadde be subyet ther-byfore, hyt oght be I-noght, þat thay al by good wylle yold ham to kyng henry, by othes & by ostages, & al sykernesse that hymself lyked; & þe popes that þer-aftyr hym graunted & confermed the lordshyp of the lond, 24 & accorsed al ham that ỹn any tyme thar-ayeyn come. And thegh̃ thay, through kynd falsnesse & vnstabilnesse that yn ham ys, lytyl tel of othes & of mansynge, natheles, thay wer neuer, throg̃h no man that power hadde, ther-of assoylled ne vnbound. 28 Bot man may bynd hymself wyth such thyng, bot nat so lyghly vnbynd.

[CHAPTER LVIII.]

Maystir̃ Geraud ne telleth no forther of the conquest; bot of þe lette where-throg̃h the lond 32 was [not] clenlych I-conquered, ne the folk fully I-brought yn thedone, he telleth such resons:—Thay that fyrst comẽn, haddẽn ful wel I-spedde wyth-out any lette, yif þe kyng ne hadd so astyly

that was the Erlis by hys wyfe, The lorchipp clenly the Erle yaue to the kyng; and al the Pryneys of the londe ther-aftyr, by har good-will, yoldyn ham to the kyng to be euer-more subiecte to hym and to hys. Vpon al this, the pope of Rome, that is hede of al crystyndome, *and* that hath a Special ryght of al the Ilandys of *qui insulas omnes sibi speciali quodam jure respiciunt.* as wid as the worlde is, he yaue Plenerly, *and* confermyd to the kyng, the lorchipp of the lond, as hit is to-fore tolde. And of eldyre ryght we fyndyth also y-writte, that the kyng of Englande haue to Irlande * of Gormon, Belynes Sone, Kyng of Brytaine¹, that is now England, he come Into Irland, and toke the londe; *and* many a yere thay bare hym truage, *and* othyr aftyr hym, Into brytaine. Ther-aftyr also, kyng Artoure hadd truage out of Irland²; and Gylmory the kyng, that that tyme was wyth othyr kynges of the Ilandis, was *with* hym at the grete feste that he helde at karliōn. On othyr halue, the Pepil of Irlande come fryste out of Bascles *and* out of Bayon, that longyth now to gascoyne, Wherof the kynges of Englande ben lordys. And thus ye may wel vnderstonde that, both by olde ryght and by new, the kynges of England owen well to haue the lorchipp of Irland. And thegh the folke of the londe neuer hadd be Subiecte ther-by-fore, hit oght be y-now, that thay al, by good-will, yaue ham to the kyng henry by othys and hostages, *and* by al maner Surte that he desyrid³; and the Popis that ther-aftyr hym graunted *and* confermyd the lorchipp of the londe, and acorsyd al them that in any tyme ther-agayn come. ¶ And thegh thay, by kynde falsnes and vnstabilnes that in ham is, lytel tell of othys *and* of mansyng, natheles, thay were neuer, by noo man that Power hadd, therof assoilled ne vnbound. But a man may bynde hym-Selfe *with* Such thyng, but nocht So lyght vn-bynde.

[CHAPTER LVIII.]

Maister geraud ne tellyth no ferdyr the conquest; but of the lette wherfor the londe was [not] clenlych I-conquerid, ne the Pepil fully y-brought in theudom, he tellyth Such resonys:—Thay that fryst comen, haddyn full well y-Spede

¹ Brytayne, MS.² firmis fidei sacramentique vinculis: v. 320.

Nota that Irysh-men bene fals of kynde.

² *Hiberniae reges Tributarios habuisse.*

Pructerea urbs Baonensis, quam hodie nostra continet Gasconia, Blasconiae caput est, unde Hibernenses proreuerant.

Nota that Irysh-men bene fals of kynde.

Capitulum lvij^m.

1. Henry II's stopping the coming of the English. I-sent, & forboden that no man ne shold to ham come; & thay that weŕ ynto þe lond I-come, shold the lond leue, & turne ayeine, otheŕ forlese al that thay helden of the kynge yn otheŕ londes. And whaŕ the kynge was ynto the lond 4

2. His going home so soon after his Invasion of Ireland. hymself I-come wyth so moch power, hyt had he wel ynoght, naŕ that he hadd so sone turned ayeine, throug the popes heste & þe cardynals, & eke the lyddernesse that hys sones hadden I-purueyed to do hym, the whyll that he was out of lond. ffor 8 the folk that, at the begynnynge of so sodeyne comynge, was so swyth amayed, & aferd & agrysed of the wepned men stalwarthnesse, and of the derne wondynge of arwes, throug lange abydynge & sleuyth of Maystres that no stalwarthnesse ne sykernesse was 12 wyth, by lytyll & lytel lerned, wepne to berŕ, arwes to shote; & so wel woned ham ther-to, that oft ham byfelle wonderly goode happes yn fyght vpon englysshe-men; & on thys maner, that at the begynnynge lyghly myght be I-shent & I-brought vnder fote, 16 wortheŕ bold & staluarth to wythstond, & defend ham-self. Me may rede & ouerseche the boke of kynges, þe prophetes, al the old rede fro end to otheŕ, & other tymes that afoor haue I-be; me shal neuer fynd that werŕ & hate came vpon folk, bot for 20 haŕ synnes; & so hyt may wel be of the folk of Irland, that oft serued wel, for haŕ synnes, to haue werre & wrak of otheŕ outlondes men; natheles, god almyghty was nat ham so wengeable wrot, that he tholled ham fully, nether al to be vndone, ne fully 24 I-brought yn-to theudome, nether * thay clenly forelore grace; ne the other clenlych hadden grace, the Maystrye to hawe, ham fully & preysebly yn theudome for to hold. Me fynt that þe Iresshemmen hadden four prophetes, euery yn hys tyme, Patryk, Molyng, 28 Braken, & Colmkylly, whos bokes ben wyth ham an Iresshe I-wrytte; euery of ham spekeŕ of the fyght of thys conqueste, & seyne that 'lange stryf & oft fyghtynge shal be for thys lond; & oft the lond shal be I-horyed & I-steyned wyth grete slaght of 32 men.' Bot vnnethe thay beheteth the Englyssh peple fully þe maystrye a lytell aŕ domesday, & that the lond shal from see to see be I-castelled & fully I-won. Bot the englysshe-men sholleŕ, ar that, oft wel feble be, & myche desayse yn the lond so [? se]. Barcaŕ 36

The Irish, at first frightend, learnt to fight and shoot,

and often beat the English.

War comes on folk only for their sins. The Irish sind, but God gave

[*Fol. 26 a.]

no one grace to enslave them.

The four chief Irish Prophets say that the

English shan't fully conquer Ireland till Doomsday;

with-out any lette, yf the kyng ne hadd So hastely y-sende *and* *si non primis praeursorum adventibus regio fuisse edicto praevisa sequela.* comandid that no man ne sholde to ham come; and thay that were Into the londe y-come, sholde the londe lewe, *and* turne ayeyn, othyr to lese al that thay heldyn of the kyng in othyr londys. And whan the kyng was Into the land hym-Selfe y-come with So mych Power, hit hadd y-be wel y-now, ' nar that he hadd So Sone turned agayn, through the Popis comandment and the cardynalis. And also the wickydnys that his Sones haddyn y-Purueyed to done hym, the whyle that he was out of londe. For the Pepil that, at the begynnyng of So Sodeyn comyng, was So gretly aferde *and* agrisid the wepynnyd-men boldenys, *and* of the cruel woundyng of arowes, throw longe abydyng and Sleuth of Maysters, that no boldnys ne Sickyrnys was wyth, by lytell and lytell lernyd wepyd to berre, Arrowes to shote; *and* So wel vsyd ham therto, that many tymys ham by-fell wondyrly good happys in fyght vpon englysh-men; and on this manere, that at the begynnyng lygh[t]ly myght be shente *and* broght vndyrfoote, Weryn bolde and hardy to Wythstonde *and* defende ham-Selfe / We may rede and ouerseche the boke of kynges, the prophetis, al the olde rede fro ende to oper, *and* othyr tymys that to-for haue y-be, We shal neuer fynde that were ne hate came vpon Pepill, but for har Synnes. And So hit may wel be of the Pepil of Irland, that ofte serued wel, for har Synnes, to haue werre * and wrake of othyr strange comen men. Natheles, god almyghty was not ham so wengeabil wroth that he wolde fully ham Putte out of londe, nethyre al to be vndone, ne fully broght Into traldome, nethyr thay clenly forlorne grace. Nethyr ne othyr hadd not fully grace, the Maystry to haue, *and* ham fully *and* Pesabily in thraldome to holde / ¶ We fyndyth that the Irysh-men haddyn iiii^e prophetis euery in his tyme, Patrike, Molyng, Brakan and Colmkylle, Whos bokis ben wyth ham in Irysh writte. Euery of ham Spekyth of the fyght of this conqweste, And Sayne that 'lange stryfe *and* of fyghtyng shal be for this londe; *and* ofte the lond shal be defowlid *and* y-steynynd wyth grete Slaght of men.' But vnnethe thay grauntyth that the Englysh pepil fully the maystry, a lytel ar the day of Dome, *and* that the lond shal from See to See / be castelid *and* fully Enhabited ² / But þe Englysh-men shal, ar that, ofte wel febil be, *and* mych

si non primis praeursorum adventibus regio fuisse edicto praevisa sequela.

si ab ausu nobilitate praemature intestina conspiratio non revocasset.

confundi poterat.

totam . . . Veteris Testamenti seriem.

[*Fol. 26 a.]

vel omnino subjici meruit vel deleri.

Nota de prophetis Hibernie.

² *ex toto subacta et incus-tellata.*

but they shall be troubled by a King from St. Patrick's Mountains.

seyth, that 'through a kyng that shal come out of the wyl montayngnes of seynt patrykes þat me cleppeth slesco (?), & on a soneday-nyght¹, a castel yn the wodd contreys of Offalye shal to-brek, most what al the Englysshe-men of Irland shullen 4
be 'I-stourbet' //

[CHAPTER LIX.]

I'll tell you why Prince John didn't succeed in Ireland.

When he landed, rich men welcomd him, but had their beards pulld by his young Normans.

The Irish went off disgusted, and told their countrymen.

The three chiefs of Ireland (of Limerick, Connaught, and Cork,)

swore they'd fight for their freedom to the death.

Now and for whych thyng hit was, that the kynges sonnes trauaille, and bar mochel costes, at thys tyme ne sped nat as tham ogh, hyt ys noñ harme 8
thegh me heṛ sette; for thegh of thyng that ys I-past ne be no remedy, natheles, of thyng that ys to come, me may be waṛ by ensample of haṛ dede. Whan the kynges sone was Icome to lond at Waterford, thedeṛ come to hym Iresshe-meñ of the 12
contray, ryeh meñ, and of pees trew hym læsoght, & made hym grete gladnesshe as hare lord, & profred hym to kysseñ. Thay anoon ryght of tho new meñ, & namely of the Normannes, wereñ shame-fully receyued, & lothly I-hokred, & by the berdes—whych, 16
yn the maner of the contrey, they haddeñ grete & long—some of ham shamly wereñ I-shakeñ & I-draw. As sone as thay comen to haṛ owne, wyth al that thay hadden thay wyth-drowen ham, & left the contrey & wenten to the kyng of Thomoñ, and hym [told], & 20
also the kyng of desmoñ & the kyng of Connaght, what thay hadd receyued & found wyth the kynges sone. ¶ A yonglyng al wyth yonglynges gouerned; & by yonge meñ rede, al he wrought; no wytte ne no staluarthnesse wyth hym was found; no sekernese ne 24
trouth to Iresshemeñ, thayr south nat behete. Whañ tythynges heṛ-of was I-spronge, thay thre cheftayns of Irland that weṛ theṛ redy to come to the kynges sone, & ham to hym, & do hym homage, thay thoghtten that, aftyr thay smal harmes, woldeñ come more; & 28
whañ me such thyng dydde to good meñ & meke, wel wors me wold do the prouth & the vnbuxum. Thay toke ham to rede, & sworṛ to-geddeṛ that thay woldeñ vpon haṛ lyues wythstond the ryghtes of haṛ old fredomes, & defende, for to be al to-heweñ. 32
And for that thay shold² th[is] th[ing] the better to end brynge, thay

¹ MS. sone myght.

² From this line to the end of the page, the ends of the lines are missing, the corner of the page being torn off.

myssayse haue in the londe. So **Brakan Seyth**, that 'through' a kynge that shal come of the wyld Montaignes of Seynte Patrickes, that is callid Selfco, and on a soneday-nyght², a castel in the wode contreies of Ofelanye shal breke, most what al the Englysh-men of Irland shal be strobyd.'

Slefo,
alins
Ofaley.

[CHAPTER LIX.]

NOW and for wyche thyng hit was, that the kynges Sones travayll, and his grete costes, at this tyme sped noght as tham oght, Hit is none harme thegh I her reherse. Forto speke of thyng that is Paste, is no remedy; Nevyrthelasse, of thyng that is to come, we may be-ware by ensampil of har dedes //

¶ Whan the kynges Sone was come to londe at Watyrforde, thedyr come to hym Irysh-men of the contray, rych men³, and of trew Pees hym be-soght / and made hym grete gladnys as har lorde, and proferid to kysse hym. Than ancone ryght / of two new men, and namely of the Normanes, waryn shamefully resewid, and lewidly Pullid ham by the Berdys, whych, in the maner of the contrey, thay haddyū grete and longe. Some of them wer Shamefully shaken and ydrawen. As Sone as thay comen to har owyn, wyth all that thay hadde, thay wythdrawen ham and leste the contrey, and wente to the kyng of Thomonde, and tolde hym, and also the kyng of Desmonde and the kyng of Connaght, what thay hadd resewyd and found with the kynges sone. ¶ A yonglynge al wyth yonglynges gouernyd, and by yonge men consayl al didd; And no witte ne boldnys wyth hym was founde; ne Surte, ne trouth, to yrysh-men thay couth not promyse⁵. ¶ Whan tythyngys herof was spronge, thay iij⁶ captaynys of Irland⁶ that was that tyme redy to come to the kynges sone, and yelde ham to hym, and to do hym homage, thay thoghten, that aftyr thay smale harmys, wolde come more; and whan thay Such thyng did to good men and meke, Wel wors thay wolde do to the Prute and the vnbuxum. Thay toke hame to *consail, and Sware to-gadderes that thay woldyn vpon Har Lywes wythstond the ryghtes of har olde fredomys, and defende til thay were al hewyde. And for thay sholde this thyng the bettyr brynge to

Capitulum
lix^m.

³ viri non
infirmi,
fideles
hactenus

Anglia, et
pacifici,
tanquam

domino
congratu-
lantes,

et eum in
osculo

pacis sus-
cipientes.

⁴ a novis
nostris et

Normannis.

⁵ nullam

Hibernicis

securi-
tatem pro-
mittentes.

⁶ tres prin-
cipales

tunc

temporis

Hiberniae

postea,

Limeric-
ensis,

Connac-
tensis, et

Corga-
gicnsis.

Ihesus.

[*Fol. 26
b.]

antiquae

libertalis

sub

capitum

discrimine

jura
tuendum.

¹ per quemdam regem, de desertis Patricii montibus venturum, et nocte Dominica, castrum quoddam in nemorosis Ophelanie partibus irrupturum, jura omnes fere Anglici ab Hibernia turbabuntur.—Op. v. 385.

² MS. sone myght (the same mistake, as before, in both MSS.).

The Irish rebels make friends with their foes. Tho' false themselves, they object to others being false to them.

[*Fol. 26 b.]

John's failure is explaind by Rehoboam's, whose following of young men's advice, lost him ten Tribes of Israel.

John gave the lands of faithful Irish, to new men.

So these Irish turnd againt him.

The coast towns and castles were given to rebels, who only gatherd gold, and did harm to peace-men, not to foes.

sentteñ about ynto al the lond, & allyed h . . . & maden frendes of ham that weñ byfore fome[u], & thus throggh ham that th . . -nyge putte (progh pryde) from ham, both thaye & al other most dele were . . . pys folke, as euery otheñ wyld folk, thegh thay no 4 wyrshype ne couthe . . . me shold do ham wyrshype & manshype. And thegh thay nat be wyth falsnesse, natheles thay shonnet that otheñ do ham [any falskede;] & thus the good that thay loueth yn otheñ, thay rech. ham 8 to-gydeñ thay *Euery wysman vnderstond hym by Roboam, Salomones sone, how mych harme falleth of pryde & ouertrowshype. whañ he, aftyñ hys fadyñ, was made kyng of Israel, þe folk come to hym, & bysoght hym that he shold ham somewhat 12 allegge of þe seruyces that thay weñ I-woned to do hys fadyr. He was yonge; and by yonge meñ consaylle, answard & seyde, 'My fyngyñ ys gretteñ thañ was my faders ryggebone; & yf he yow bette wyth yarde, y wyl yow bette wyth breres.' ¶ Throggh that 16 answañ, the ten kynredes hym lefteñ, & maden ham kyng of Ieroboam, & neuer aftyñ weren vnder hym ne nooñ of hys: of al þe folk of Israel, non wyth hym abode, bot twey kynredes. Vpon thys, þe Iresshe-men londes, that, fro the tyme that Robert steuenes- 20 sone fyrst come ynto þe lond, trewly wyth englysshe-men haddeñ I-be, weñ I-take fro ham, & yeuen to the newe meñ. And thay anooñ turned to the Iresshe-men, & aspyed al the harme that thay myght do to þe Englysshe; & werñ, so mych the more harme dydde, 24 that thay so pryue werñ wyth ham ther-byfore

[CHAPTER LX.]

The tounes vp-on the see, and the castels, wyth the londes that to ham belonget, & the truages & the rentes that shold be I-spende yn comyn nede of the 28 lond, & to ham, of rebelles thay wañ I-sette to such that wel fayne gadered gold & syluer wyth-yn woves, eten wel & drynkeñ, and ladden Idel lyf, & al thyng vnprofytably wastedeñ, to harme of pees-meñ, & nat of fomeñ. Amonge otheñ harmes betydde yit 32 more, that yn lond so smert & so kene, & folk so weyward & so vnredy, & so mych harme doynge, The keypyng & the maystry toke

Ende, thay Sende about into al the londe, and allied ham togaderis, *and* madyn frendys of tham that were enemys. And thus throw ham, that thay at the begyynyng Putte (throw Pryde) from them, both thay and al otheres for the more parte was fro them stirrid.

¶ This Pepyll, as euery othyr wyldy Pepill, thegh thay no wyrechipp kowth not, Natheles thay wolde that hy sholde do ham wyrechippe *and* manshipe. And thegh thay be not aferde ne ashamyd to be founde wyth falsnesse, Natheles, thay Shonnyth that any othyr sholde do ham any falshede: and thay lowyth trowth; and thus good that thay lowyth in otheres, thay thynke no fors whow lytill be found in ham-Selfe therof. Euery vysman vnderstond hym by Roboam, Salomones Sone, how mych harym fallyth of Pryde. Whan he, after his fadyr, was made kyng of Israel, the Pepil come to hym, *and* besoght hym that he sholde ham Somewhat allegge of the Seruyces that thay were wonyd to do to his fadyr. He was yonge; and, by yonge men consayl, answerid and Sayde,

¶ "My fyngyr is more *and* grettyr then was my Fadyris bake-bone; And yf he bette yow wyth yarde, y will bette you *with* breris" /

¶ And for that answer, al the tene kynredes lefte hym / *and* made ham a kyng of Ieroboam; *and* neuer after weryn vnder hym, ne noone of his. Of al the Pepil of Israel, none *with* hym abode, but two kynredis. Vpon this, the Irysh-men londes that fro the tyme that Robert Steuenes Sone fryste come Into the londe, trewely wyth englysh-men haddyn, wer take fro ham, *and* yewyn to two new men¹. And thay anoone turnyd to the Irysh-men, *and* aspied al the harme that thay myght do to þe Englysh; and werre, so mych the more harme didde, that thay were so Pryue wyth ham therto-fore².

[CHAPTER LX.]

The tounes vpon the See, *and* the castelis, wyth the londys that to ham Partenyd, and the truages and the rentes that sholde be I-Spend in the comyn Profite of the londe, *and* yaue hit to Rebellys³, *and* to suche that well fayne gaderid golde and Syluer wyth-In woves, etten wel, and drounken, *and* laddyn ydill lyfe, and al thyng vnprofytably wastyne, to grete harme of Pees men, *and* noght to enemys. Amonge al othyr harmys befell yit more, that in the londe So Smyrte *and* So kene, *and* Pepil So weyward *and* So vnredy, *and* So mych harme doynge,

Quia primos a nobis insolenter repulimus... tam illos quam majores universos eo exemplo procul absterrimus bonum quod in aliis diligunt, minus in se reperiri non erubescunt.

ego vos caedam scorpionibus.

novis nostris, contra promissa contulimus.

tanto quidem ad nocendum efficaciores, quanto prius fuerant familiariores.

est assignata, qui aurum

Capitulum lx^m.

assidue intra

muros aucupantes

... cum civium, non

hostium damno

cuncta inutiliter com-

sumebant.

The English
Governors
were
cowards,
and liked
women
better than
war.

The Irish
now burnt,
slew, and
stole.
The English
of the coast
stuck to wine
and
women.
The inland
was plundered
by the Irish.

Every-
where was
wailing ;

every day
fresh news
of fire and
slaughter.

Judges

ruind
good men
and true,

[*Fol. 27
a.]

worse than
Irish foes
did.

an hand, that leuer¹ hadde har ryche robes, than ham to wepne ;
leuer to sytte at borde, þan hoste to lede ; redyeþ to fle þan to
fyght ; leuer to hold a fayr mayd by the womb, thañ speþ & sheld
to beþ an hand ; nether trewe to haþ vnderlynges, ne dredful to haþ⁴
enemyes. They had nat that good herte, ne of ky[nde] yt comþ to
hañ, for to spar the meke, & wreke ham on the prout ; bot al ayeine
that, thay sp[arid & ²] lykled wyth the sterne, & pulled & strope
ham that noñ harme dydde. Vnder whych gouernours, the⁸
Iresshe-meñ begoñ to pryde & take ouer-hand of the englysshe,
branten and slowen, robbedeñ And stelled ; for the maystres wyth
haþ meygne, helden ham alwey yn the cytees vpon the see, per
plente was of wyñ & of women, to whych they weren al clenlych¹²
I-yeue to. Bot the lond wyth-In, & the marches next haþ enemyes,
& the castles & the tounes that weren amyð, weren I-lefte &
I-brant, the men I-robbed & I-sleyn, wyth-out any lette. The
good knyghtes & the eldre folk of the lond, as meñ that me¹⁶
noight told-by that whyle, wyth-drow ham al sleghtly, & held ham
al stytle, for to awayty al soft, what endynges such hyddous stormes
wold ham. That whyle, þe state of the lond was such, In al places
was weylynges & wonynges, yollynges & crynges ; Al þe weyes forlete ;²⁰
no mañ ne trust to mete wyth other ; euery day come newe
tythynges of bernynges & sleynge, robberynges & reuyng³ yn the out
londes : vnneth a lytel shadow of pees was yn þe bourgh tounes, per
the wyn quenched al þe sorowe ; the gold & the syluer, al oper²⁴
harmes ; thaþ me shold yn so lydder world wend from contray to
contray wyth folk I-wepned, and chasty ham that mysdeden. Thay
setten Iustices of bench yn haþ robes of scarlet & menyuer : meñ
wyth swerdes & bates ham for to kepe, ther no nede was. Than²⁸
was þe motynges, the pledynges and reynnynges of good men and
trewe that * non harme dydden : wors ham dydde the harme & the
ten that pay ther-through haddeñ, þañ the robberynges & reuynges that
thaþ enemyes ham dydde. ¶ Another thynges that mych was to³²

¹ MS. *louer*.

² Torn out.

³ The corner of p. 26 b was torn off before being written upon, so that there are no words missing, and the lines follow each other as usual.

The keyynge¹, and the men that was Maysteres to kepe the lande, he had lewer his rych clothis to were, than wepyn to berre; and lowid bettyr to sitte at borde, than hoste to lede; and more redyer to fle than to fyght; leuer to holde a fayre mayde by the wombe, than sperre and Shelde to ber an honde. And also they wer not trewe to har Subiectis, ne dredfull to har enemys. They had not that * good Herte, ne of good Kynde Hit come to Ham, forto Spare the meke, and wreke Ham on the Prowte; but al the contrary thay did. Thay Sparid and fikyllid wyth the sterne, and toke and Pullid the meke, and them that noone harme did // Vndyr whych gouernors, the Irysh-men begon to be Prowde, and to haue the Maystry of the Englysh-men, and branten, and Slayne, and Stellen / For thay Maysteris, wyth har meny, heldyn² ham at al tymys in the Citteis² vpon the see-syde, ther Plente was of wyne and of women, to the wyche thay yaue ham clenly to. But the lond wyth-In, and the marchis nexte har enemys, and the castelis and the tounes that weryn a-myde, weryn lefte and brante, the men robyd and Slayn, wyth-out any resistence. The good knyghtes and the eldyr Pepill of the londe, as men that noght is tolde by, that tyme wythdrow ham al Slyly, and held ham al styll, for-to witte al Softe what Ende Suche grete Stormys sholde haue. That tyme, the state of the londe was Suche, In al Placis was wepyng and cryenge, and myche Sorrow. All the weyes was lefte, that no man trustid not to mete with anohtyr; euery day come newe tythyngis of brennyng and Sleyng, robberyng and rewyng in the out-landis. Vnneth a lytyll Sadow of Pees was in the burgage tounes³, ther the wyne quenched al the Sorrow; the golde and the syluere, al the harmys. Thar thay Sholde, in so wyckyd a tyme, goo from conray to conray wyth Pepill y-wepenyd, and correcte ham that did amys; Thay Syttyn Iustices of benche in hare Roobis of Scarlete and menywere; men with Swerdis and battis forto kepe ham, ther no nede was. Than was the motyng, the pledyng, and reuyng of goode men and trew, that noone harme didde. Wors hame didd the harme and the angyr that thay ther throggh haddyn / than the robberyng and reuyng that har enemys ham dide // Anohtyr thyng that gretly is to mowrne, be-felle also, wher-of god was

A. D. 1185.

¹ *Stipendiaria quippe familia, suos imitata magistros, suisque maioribus morem gerens.*

[*Fol. 27 a.]

² [heldym MS.]
vino venerique data, maritimis in urbibus moram assidue faciebat. Antiqua vero militia novorum ingruente malitia, tanquam vilis et reprobata, latuit interim et siluit.

³ *sed solum in urbibus pacis ut cumque seruari umbra videbatur.*

[See the Latin below. P. 152.]

A. D. 1185. rewe byfelle also, wha^r-of gode was worste I-quemed: Ther
 prince cometh newly to lond^e hyt becometh welle that he wyrshype
 god & holy chyrch, mayntenynge the ryghtes, & yeue more there-to.
 Bot þe newe prynce nat only held hym from that for to eche the 4
 good of holy chyrch, bot londes & rentes & pryuyleges that thay of
 old world hadde & vsed, at hys fyrst comynge yn many places he
 bename al clene; yⁿ othe^r places he chaunged, & yaue wors & lasse
 tha^r fo^r; & hyt may wel be, þat hys spede yn othere thynges was 8
 euer the wors & noght þe betty^r. On thys maner the englysshe
 werē both argh & woke to assayllen and to fyght, þe Iresshe
 stronge & bold to wythstonde, tyl that þe new prynce saue openly
 that al thyng vnde^r hys newe meⁿ yede to loste; he chaunget 12
 ham & renued, as meⁿ that nothyng couth, & droghⁿ to hym the
 old knyghtes & the good meⁿ that wareⁿ ther-to-fo^r Ivsed to
 fyght yn the maner of þe lond, & sette Io^hn de Curcy maystre &
 chefteyne of al thyng that was to done; vnder whomⁿ þe state & 16
 þe pees of the lond, by as mych began anooⁿ ryght to amend, as
 Io^hn, of hert & of staluarthnesshe, passed al othe^r, passynge &
 throug sechyng the Inlondes, as Desmone, Thomone, Mouneste^r,
 Connaght; & let nat the meygne vndo hamsel^f wyth oft harme & 20
 lostes, doynge to hys fomen, & oft to hym-self & to hys, as he that
 noght was adredde to assaye þe vnsyke^r aduentures of fyght & of
 baret.

[CHAPTER LXI.]

Prince
 John had
 three sets
 of men: 1.
 Normans,
 the worst,
 whom he
 trusted
 most; 2.
 the Eng-
 lish he
 brought
 with him;
 3. the Eng-
 lish in Ire-
 land, the
 best, whom
 he trusted
 least.

¹ The yonge prynce at the begynnynge hadde wyth 24
 hym thre manere of meygne, Normannes,
 Englysshe, & þe Englysshe that he found yn the lond. In wyr-
 shype, gret frenshype, & loue, he hold the fyrst & the worst; In
 lasse, the mydmest & the better; In allerleste, the latest & þe 28
 beste. The fyrst ne myght nat lyue wyth-out wyn, yn whyche thay
 werē fostred; & for-thy thay forsokenⁿ on al wyse to beⁿ yn
 marches & yn castels fe^r from the see I-sette; no-whe^r bot about
 the kynges sone & hys body, kepe thay myght nat be, & hym folwen, 32
 & negh hym be, wyth-out any departynge. fe^r from the weste &

¹ The usual large initial letter is omitted here, a space being left for it in which a small t is put.

moste dysplesyd. Ther Prynce comyth newely to londe, hit becomyth that he wirchippe god and holy church, mayntenynge the ryghtes, *and* yeue more therto. But the new Prynce, not oonly helde hym frome that, forto eche the good of hooly church; but londis and rentis *and* Pryuylegis that thay of olde Worlde hadde *and* vsyd / At his fryst comynge, in many Placis he toke al clene, and in othyr Placis he chaungid, *and* yaue Wors and lasse therfor. And hit may wel be, that his Spede in othyr thyngis was euer the wors, *and* noght the bettyr. On this maner the Englysh-men wer both febill and feynte to assaylen and to fyght, and the Irysh-men bolde *and* stronge to wythsonde, till that the new Prynce opynly Saw that al thyng vndyr his new men yede to loste. he chaunged ham, *and* remewid as men that nothyng kowth, *and* drewe to hym the olde knyghtes, and the good men that weryn therto-for y-vsyd to fyght in the maner of the londe, And Sette Ihon de Curcy, Maystyr and captayn of al thyng that was to down, Vndyr Whom the State and the Pees of the londe, by as-mych began anoone ryght to amende, as Ihon, of herte *and of Boldnys, Passid all othyr, Passynge *and* throw shechyng the In-Londys, As Desmonde, Thomon, Mownyster, Connaght, *and* lette not the meny Vndo ham-Selfe wyth ofte harme *and* lostis, doynge to his ennemy *and* ofte to hym-Selfe *and* to his, as he that noght was adrede to assay the vnsure aduentures of fyght And of battaylle.

[CHAPTER LXI.]

The yonge Prynce at the begynnyng hadd with hym thre maner of menny, Normanes, Englyssh, and the Englyssh that he founde in the londe / In grete wyrchipp, frendshipp and loue, he helde the fryste and the worste. In lasse, the Secounde and the bettyr. And in alltherleste, the latyste and the beste. The fryste myght not lyue wyth-out wyn, in which they weryn fosterid; And therfor thay forsoke to be in marchis and in castelis ferre frome the See ysette¹ / *and*² myght not be in no Place but aboute the kyngis Sone, (*and* [from] his body, kepe thay myght not be,) and hym followyn, *and* ney to hym be, with-out any departynge. ferre from the Weste, and ney to the Eeste; Fer from

¹ Primi vino, quo nutriti fuerant, carere non volentes, in remotis marchis, et castris procul a mari constructis, moram facere modis omnibus recusabant.—*Op.* v. 394-5.

A. D. 1185.
nihil de novo conferentes . . . quinimmo terris statim sublati et possessionibus . .

hostibus autem ad rebellandum audacissimis.

summam rerum gerendarum curam commisit.

[*Fol. 27 b.]

penitimas terrae partes.

incertam bellici certaminis aleam.

Capitulum lxj^m.

In summa familiaritate primos habuimus.

² *solum filii regis lintera stipare, solum filio regis inseparabiliter assistere.*

A. D. 1185. negh al ceste ; fēr from myssayse, & negh ayse, thay wyllēt euer to
 John's be sette. ¶ Ianglers & bosters, & of grette othes, and stronge
 young men were lyers, foderes, whybelers, Moch told by ham-self throug pryde, &
 were lytel by other̄ ; yiftes & wyrshype to receyue, thay wer the fyrst ; 4
 liars, bribe- takers. dout & perrylle to receyue, thay wār euer the laste. The lytel good
 that thay dydde that wyth hym comēd, that was throug the englysshe that he wyth hym broght ; bot thay was no thyngē derward wyth hym ayeyns the other, that no good ne couth do. 8
 And for the good knyghtes & the mēd throug whych the wey ynto
 He forsook the good old Eng- lishmen, the lond was fyrst I-opened, wēr wyth ham bot as forsaken̄ & forlete ; nōd I-cleppeth to conssaylle bot the newe ; to non trusted he bot to the newe ; to nōd was wyrshype I-do bot to the newe. 12
 Hyt byfelle, that whād thay other̄ wythdrowe ham for such thyngē, & lete ham I-worth, yn al thyngē that thay dydde, lytel or noght thay sp[ed]de. Such gyltes & so many, thegh̄ thay both wēr myche to wite, yong old & yonge rede, natheles þe yonge lyddē rede was 16
 the wise whom the rebels needed. more gylty ; ffore boustyous lond and vnredy, hadde al nede to be Irotet and I-kept throuḡ wyse mēd & redy.

[CHAPTER LXII.]

John builds three Castles, at Ardfinan, Lismore, Tibragh. 1 Aftyr that the kynges sone hadde the lordshype of Irland, & ynto the lond was y-come, Aduētures byfelle 20
 that maystyr̄ Gerot shortly toucheth. Of thre castels that he anōd ryght lete rere, on at Ardfynan, -another̄ at lysmore, the thyr̄d at Tybraghnych. Of thre staluarth * knyghtes that throug grete mesaduentur̄ weren I-slawe, Robert de Barry at Lysmore ; 24
 [*Fol. 7 b.] Reymond, hughes sone, at Olethād ; Reymon of Cantetōd yn Osserye. Of a partye of the meygne of Ardfynan that the kyngē of Thomōd descomfyted yn a wod per negh̄ on a mydsomȳr day, And foūr knyghtes that ther̄ wēr y-slau ; & thay of Tothmōd the 28
 Three Knights are slain. R. Fitz-Hugh, &c. sam day wer dyscomfyt to-fōr̄ Tybragh̄ ; & a grete Iresshe-man, Ograde, was ther̄ I-slawe, wyth many other̄ of the meygne of Ardfynād, that sone aftȳr, yn a prey-takyngē toward lymeryke weyes dyscomfyte, & xix knyghtes I-slawe. Of the prynce Of 32
 Men of Thomond, or Limerick, slain ; and O'Grady (?) Dermot, King of Desmond dies. Desmōd, Dermot Maccarthy, that wīth many other̄ yn a parlement

¹ The usual large initial letter is omitted, space being left for it.

myssayse, *and* nygh toayse, thay wolde euer to be sette. // Iangleris, A. D. 1185.
 bosteris, and of grete othis, stronge lyeris, lycheres, Why-beleres, *verbosi,*
 Moche sette by ham-selfe for Pride, *and* lytill by otheres: yiftis *jactatores,*
 and wyrchipp to rescewe, thay were the fryst; Dowte and Peril *enormium*
 to rescewe, thay wer euer the laste. The lytill good that thay *juramen-*
 didd̄ that wyth hym comyn, that was throgh the Englyssh that *torum*
 he wyth hym broght. But thay was nothyng Derward wyth hym *auctores.*
 agaynys the othyr, that no good ne couth do / And for the *solum*
 good knyghtes and the men, throw whych the wey into the lond *novis fidem*
 was fryste oppenyd, wer wyth ham but as forsakyn *habentes,* *solum*
 non callid to consaill, but the newe; to noone trustid he¹, but to *novos*
 the new; to noone was wirchipp dōnē, but to the newe. ²Hit *dignos*
 befel that, whan thay othyr wythdraw hame for Suche thyngē, *honore*
 and lette ham alone, wyth al thyngē that thay did, Lytell or *putavimus.*
 noght thay Spede. Such gyltes and So many, thegh thay both *operas non*
 wer mych to witte, yonge elde *and* yonge rede, natheles the yonge *ingrenti-*
 lewid consaylle was mor gylty; For bostious, loude *and* vnredy, *bis, in*
 hadd grete nede to be y-rotid and y-kepete through wysmen and *agendis*
 redy. *parum isti*
profecis-
sent.

[CHAPTER LXII.]

Aftyr that tyme that the kynges Sone hadde the *Capitulum*
 lordshipp of Irland̄, and into the londe was come, ad- *lxij^m.*
 ventures befell that Maystyr geraude Sortely touchyth. Of th[r]e
 castelis that he anoone ryght lette rere, oone at ardfynan, anohtyr
 at lysmore, the thyrde at Tybraght. Of thre bolde and hardy
 knyghtes, that throw gret mysadventure weryn slayne, Robert *factis ul-*
 de Barry at lysmore, Reymond Hughes-sonē at Olethan, Reymond *aversis.*
 of Canteton in Ossory. Of a party of the meny of ardfynan, that *De parte*
 the kyngē of Thomoñ descomfited in a wodde ther neygh, On a *quodam*
 Mydsomer day, And four knyghtes that were Slayn; and thay of *Archphi-*
 Thomonde the same day wer discomfite to-*for tybraght; and a *nensis*
 grete Irysh-man, Odrade, Was ther Slayn, wyth many ohtyr *familia.*
 Of the meny of ardfynan, that Sone aftyr in a pray-takyngē toward *[*Fol. 28*
 lymerike weies Discomfite³, and xix knyghtes wer Slayn. Of the *a.]*
 Prynce of Desmonde, Dermot Maccarthy, that *De . .*
 with many ohtyr in *Oggravi*
interemp-
tionē.

³ in praedae captione versus Limericum confectis.—*Op.* v. 386.

A. D. 1185. besyde Corke, throgħ Tybaud wauter & the meygne of Corke, was
 Ulstermen I-slawe. Of the meīd of kenalayne, that to boldely wentteīd ynto
 slain. Mythe to preyēd, & ther wereīd I-slawe throgħ Wyllyam le petyt,
 & an hundert heedes of ham I-brogħt to dyuelyīd. Of other hōly 4
 Saints' bodies, patryke, Bryde, &, Colmekyl, at douīd I-found, & by Iohīd de
 found. bodyes, patryke, Bryde, &, Colmekyl, at douīd I-found, & by Iohīd de
 Hugh de Courcy weī translated; of hugh de lacy, that to trysty was vpon
 A. D. 1186. hys Iresshe-meīd, & by traysoīd of ham was I-heded at dernaghī.
 ¶ Of threttedīd knyghtes, that vnder Ihon de Courcy weren I-slawe 8
 at a comynge out of Connaght. Of the staluarth yonge knyght
 Roger le Roger the powerī, that wyth many of hys, throgħ traysone, yn
 Poer slain. Osserye was I-slawe; & throgħ that thyngē, al the Iresshe of the
 The Irish silently conspire, destroy castles, and kill men. 12
 the lond stylylly sworne ham to-gyddyr ayeyns the Englysshe; whēr
 throgħ that, ¹castels yn many places wereīd I-cast adouīd, many
 meīd I-slawe, to grete perryllē to al the lond; & of many other
 aduentures that betyddēd aftyr that the kynges sone was lord of
 Irland, of whyche maystyr Geraud, ham & har gestes leueth to 16
 other that ham wrytte wold, & lust haddeīd ther-to ¹. And as thys
 An end maked of thys boke.

¹⁻¹ destructis castris pluribus, gravi insulae universae perturbatione: non indigna memoratu singula, translato in filium regis jam regni dominio, sua suorumque gesta suis assignando scriptoribus, ad ulteriora simul et utiliora festinamus.—*Op.* v. 387-8.

The unenglisht last Chapters.

Thus ends Ch. 35 of Giraldus's 2nd Book of his *Expugnacio*. His Ch. 36 is our 60, pp. 142-7, with an added Vision of 'Prince John marking out the foundations of a church, with a large nave and a very small chancel.' His Ch. 37 is our 61, pp. 146-9. In his Ch. 38, he states how the Irish are to be conquerd: in Ch. 39, how they are to be governd. Mr. Dimock's side-notes to these two Chapters are:

Ch. 38. "In every expedition, the counsel of those ought to be followed, who are best acquainted with the country and manners

a parlement besyde Corke, through Tybaud Wauter *and* the meny of Corke, was y-Slayñ. Of the men of kynnaleyn, that So boldely wentyn Into Myth, ther to take a pray, *and* ther weryn Slayñ through Willam le Petyte, and an C. hedys of ham broght to Deuelyn // Of othyr hooly bodies, Patrike, Bryde, and Colmekil / at doun y-found, *and* by Ihoñ de Curcy were translated. Of Hugh de lacy, that to trysty was vpon his Irysh-men, *And* by trayson of ham was hedid at Dernagh // Of xiiije knyghtes, that vndyr Ihoñ de Curcy weryn Slayñ at a comynge out of connaght; of the bolde yonge knyght, Roger the Powere, that wyth many of his, throw trayson, in Ossory was Slayñ; *And* Throw that thyng, all the Irysh-men of the londe Pryuely Sworne ham to-giddy ayeynes the Englyssh-men; Wherthrow that, castellis in many Places weryn caste dovne, *and* many men Slayñ, in Peril of al the londe. *And* of many othyr aduentures that by chance fell, aftyr that the kynges sonne was lorde of Irlande, the whych Maystyr Geraud, ham and har gestis lewyth to othyr that ham write wille, *and* luste haw therto; *And* as thus an ende makyth of this boke.

Et Sic finis est istius Libri.

Laus deo clementissimo.

of the people. The great difference between French warfare, and that of Ireland and Wales [is]: In these countries, light-armed troops [are] more especially necessary. In any expedition into Ireland or Wales, the troops of the Welsh Marches [are] by far the best. In Irish warfare, archers [ought] to be united with the cavalry. The three parts of the island on this side the Shannon [ought] to be well incastellated; the other part won by degrees.

Ch. 39. The necessity of firm, severe, but moderate rulers. In time of peace, castles [ought] to be built, and roads to be

improved. The Irish, once fully subjected, [ought] to be forbidden the use of arms; [and] meanwhile not to be allowed to bear the axe. [They ought] to pay an annual tribute in gold or birds."

Giraldus's Third Book tells how he found and translated the Prophecies of Merlin of Celidon.

When John became King of England, Giraldus sent him a copy of his *Topographia* and *Expugnacio*, with a Proem or Dedicatory Letter printed in the Rolls edition, v. 405-411. It reminds John of Ireland, exhorts him not to forget it, the Golden Isle, in favour of England, the Silver one; says it will form a kingdom for one of his sons; warns him that he must leave no danger behind him in Ireland when he goes to recover the foreign possessions he has lost; calls on him to fulfil Henry II's pledges to Pope Adrian, that is, to exalt the Church in Ireland and pay Peter's pence; instances God's vengeance on the non-keeping of these pledges; says how miserable the state of the Irish Church is; and advises John to take an annual tribute of gold, birds, or trees, from the Irish in token of subjection. Lastly, Giraldus asks that a scholar may translate his books into French; gives Walter Map's opinion on his own talk and Giraldus's writings; and says that he (Giraldus) is now old, and 'desires only God's favour and the appreciation of his labours by posterity.'

pp. 144-5, lines 9-2 from foot. The side-note and Latin in the Rolls edition, v. 392, are:

Prevalence
of law-
suits.

Praeterea, quamquam hostilitatis instante procella, armatae militiae tempus ingruerit, non togatae, tanta tamen civiliū causarum urgebat importunitas, ut miles veteranus non tam hoste foris, quam intus foro vexaretur.

As to the state of Ireland in 1515, see the document printed in my *Ballads from MSS.* (Ballad Soc.), p. 38-40.

GLOSSARY

(MAINLY)

BY THOMAS AUSTIN.

- & (and), *an*, *a*, 2/3, 116/7; & noon, anon, 72/18.
- A**, *prep.* on, 12/17, 16/35; in, 44/8; by, 66/2.
- Abate**, *vb.* flutter the wings, 56/32. Used like *Bate*.
- Aboue**, *adv.* above, he was all a., had the upper hand, 120/3; abouen, 116/27; abow, 117/26, 121/3.
- Abydyng**, *sb.* expectation, 111/33.
- Abydyng**, *vb.* a. after ham, waiting for them, 124/28.
- Adde**, *vb.* had, 68/2.
- A-fryght**, *pp.* frightened, afraid, 114/22.
- Agryse**, *pp.* terrified, 100/2.
- Agylte**, *vb.* sin, 88/1.
- Aleueth**, *num. adj.* eleven, 118/14. See opposite page.
- Allerformest**, foremost of all, 50/24; alther-formyst, 51/24.
- Allerleste**, least of all, 146/28; alltherleste, 147/28.
- Aller-next**, next of all, 12/33; alther-nexte, 13/34.
- Alliance**, *sb.* alliance, allies, 73/27, 87/8.
- Allyees**, *sb.* allies, 72/27. Fr. *alliés*.
- Alonge**, *adv.* always, 54/29.
- Alout**, *adv.* all out, or ? aloud, 104/12.
- Althyr**, 101/3, ? either.
- Aly**, *adj.* holy, 42/36.
- Amayed**, *pp.* amayed, dismayed, 12/16; amayed, 16/31, 20/33, 56/5.
- Amonneschyd**, *vb.* admonished, warned, 57/13; amonessed, 93/10; amonested, 56/13, 92/10.
- An**, *prep.* on: an-heghe, on high, 112/34, an-hey, 113/34; an-hond, in hand, 74/17; an-hors, on horseback, 58/25, 100/28; an Iresshe, in Irish, 116/33.
- Anguysshes**, *sb.* anguishes, anxieties, 96/13; angwyschis, 97/13.
- Anguysshous**, *adj.* anxious, 104/8. O.Fr. *anguissus*.
- Anone ryght**, *adv.* straightway, 148/22; anoone-ryght, 82/2.
- Aplesid**, *pp.* a. of, pleased with, 37/35.
- Ar**, *pron.* their, 8/17. See *Hur*.
- Ar**, *conj.* ere, 8/9, 22/23, 74/34; are, before, 9/10; before, 58/10.
- Ared**, *vb.* tell, declare, 97/25; arede, 96/26.
- Arere**, *vb.* lift up, stir up, 22/1; set right, heal, restore, 44/5; restore, rebuild, 106/9; areren, raise, 44/15; arered, raised, 30/16; arerere, 23/1.
- Arew**, *arow*, in a row, 71/13; a rewo, 70/13.
- Argh**, *adj.* timid, cowardly, 16/30, 114/6 (*feinte*, 115/6)¹.
- Argly**, *adv.* timidly, in a cowardly way, 16/23 (*fently*, 17/23)¹.
- Arreden**, *vb.* eared, ploughed, cultivated, 128/7; Erredyn, 129/7.
- Artrow**, *sb.* overtraw, mistrust, suspicion, 133/13; ortrow, 132/14.

¹ In all old words like *argh*, *arghly*, the reader should look on the opposite page for the Rawlinson MS. equivalent, which is generally later, *thy'* for the Dublin *ar[y]red*, 24/34, the Rawlinson has *londide*.

- Aryse**, *vb.* arise, rebel, 132/5; arrayse, 133.
- Aryued**, *vb.* arrived, landed, 24/34.
- As**, *conj.* for *ac*, but, 4/2.
- Asquynt**, *adv.* asquint, aslant, obliquely, 94/20.
- Assemble**, *vb.* join battle, 24/15, 30/26.
- Assembly**, *vb.* assemble, 64/5.
- Asseth**, *sb.* satisfaction, penance, 86/23.
- Astage**, *sb.* hostage, 24/23.
- Astryf**, *adv.* astrife, emulously, with rivalry, 50/26.
- Atene**, *vb.* vex, irritate, 38/24.
- Ather**, *conj.* either, or, 100/3. Note pronunciation.
- A thre**, in three parts, 104/26; at thre, 67/19.
- Attyre**, *sb.* venom, 20/23, 102/27, 114/2.
- Auctorice**, *vb.* legalise, set in authority, 107/27 (avaunce, 106/27).
- Aurel**, *sb.* April, 77/28; auril, 76/28.
- A-waitede**, *vb.* watcht, expected, 2/19.
- Awayward**, *adv.* awayward, off the land, *i. e.* westwardly, 66/33; away, 130/19.
- Awreke**, *vb.* a. hym, awreak himself, avenge himself, 4/5.
- A yere**, *adv.* yearly, 66/2.
- Ayeyne**, *prep.* against, on the approach of, 130/2; *adv.* again, 130/3.
- Ayeyns**, *prep.* against, to meet, 54/13.
- Ayse**, *sb.* ease, 148/1.
- Bad**, *vb.* prayed, 28/11.
- Baghel**, *sb.* bagle, crosier, 122/13, 123/12; baghell, 122/12. L. *baculum*.
- Bale**, *sb.* sorrow, evil, 20/24.
- Baret**, *sb.* barrat, strife, battle, 146/23.
- Barnen**, *vb.* burnt, 54/4.
- Battes**, *sb.* bats, sticks, staves, 144/28; battis, 145/31.
- Becomlyche**, *adj.* becoming, comely, 76/14; becomly, 102/20; becumliche, 54/24.
- Becryed**, *vb.* cried to, called on, 30/32, 46/20.
- Begetes**, *sb.* begets, gains, 81/15; be-yetes, 80/15.
- Begynnyge**, *vb.* begin, 54/21.
- Be-heght**, *pp.* promised, 40/9; be-het, *vb.* promised, 18/34; behete, 28/19, 114/29.
- Behoud**, *sb.* behoof, benefit, 112/30.
- Behowaybyll**, *adj.* behovable, needful, suitable, 121/4; covenable, D.
- Belad**, *pp.* narrow b., treated them straitly or hardly, 40/21; bilad hym, led him, lived, 2/9; hard biladde, *vb.* treated hardly, 2/6; bylad, 41/22; by-ladde, conducted, bore, 54/12.
- Beleft**, *vb.* remained, 118/14; *pp.* remaining, left, 58/10.
- Belokene**, *pp.* shutin, 50/12; belokken, 51/12. See *Belouke*, N. E. D.
- Belyggyng**, *vb.* beleaguering, beleaguering, 104/5.
- Be-name**, *vb.* forbad, 31/9; be-nomen, *pp.* taken away, 60/34; byname, deprive of, 100/9.
- Berewid**, *vb.* bereft of, 45/5; berewys, bereave, *imper.*, 35/10.
- Berre**, *vb.* bear, 145/2.
- Besech**, *vb.* beseek, try to get, cast at, show to, 110/30 (malyngne agaynys, 111/30).
- Besete**, *vb.* beset, blockade, 48/16; *pp.* set, possess, 102/19; besette, 103/19.
- Be-taght**, *vb.* betook, gave, committed, entrusted, 86/14.
- Be-tak**, *vb.* accompanied, 20/18; be-take, 21/18; betaken, settled, arranged, 72/31; betoke, entrusted to, 108/27.
- Betheght**, *vb.* betook, gave to, 92/11; betoke, 93/11.
- Bethwene**, *prep.* between, 10/12.
- Blote**, *adj.* soft, marshy, wet, 122/3.
- Blywe**, *adv.* belive, quickly, 29/30.
- Bolns**, *sb.* boldness, 111/35.
- Bolthenys**, *sb.* boldness, 75/15.
- Bostious**, *adj.* rough, boisterous, 149/17; boustuous, 148/17.
- Bot**, *adj.* both, 106/12.
- Bot**, *conj.* but, unless, 68/13, 106/12; bot yf, unless, 78/30.
- Both**, *conj.* but, 14/34, 22/7, 32/25, 50/4; bott, 22/32; bot, 106/12.
- Boxome**, *adj.* obedient, loyal, non-rebellious, 32/29.
- Boxom-fastines**, *sb.* buxomfastness

- firm obedience, 62/18; buxumfast-nys, 63/18.
- Branden**, *vb.* burnt, 14/24; brandyn, 15; branten, 120/33.
- Brouken**, *vb.* brook, enjoy, hold, 34/13.
- Buryles**, *sb.* buryels, burials, graves, 37/21; (pute, pits, 36/18).
- Buttellerie**, *sb.* butlery, buttery, 62/27. O. Fr. *bouteillerie*.
- By**, *vb.* be, 106/15.
- By**, *prep.* about, near, 15/6; by so, on these terms, 24/23; by forward, by agreement, 74/9; by-halues, besides, aside, 74/24; by so that, on the terms that, 24/23.
- Bygger**, *sb.* buyer, 40/2, 7.
- Byled**, *vb.* built, 128/10.
- Bynyn**, *vb.* benime, take away, 68/22.
- Byassy**, *adj.* busy, 99/18.
- Byth**, *vb.* beeth, are, 33/26.
- Cabilys**, *sb.* cables, 13/12.
- Calange**, *sb.* challenge, claim, 21/1. O. Fr. *Calanger*.
- Campled**, *vb.* wrangled, contended, fought, 74/33; camplid, 75/33.
- Camplynges**, *sb.* wranglings, contests, battles, 126/13.
- Candrede**, *sb.* cantred, hundred, 56/21; cantred, 8/19, 12/33; a Cantrede is 'an hundred toun lond' (100 townlands or townships), 124/2.
- Castel**, *vb.* castle, fortify, 127/22; castely, 126/22; casteled, 128/3.
- Cee**, *sb.* see: Cee church, Cathedral, 37/31.
- Chamfaste**, *adj.* shamefast, 76/13.
- Chase**, *pp.* chosen, 124/12.
- Cheffar**, *sb.* trade, 12/7.
- Chek-toth**, *sb.* cheek-tooth, grinder, double tooth, 108/8.
- Chepmen**, *sb.* chapmen, 38/33.
- Cheuetayn**, *sb.* chieftain, 26/11.
- Chippe**, *sb.* ship, 13/13; chippis, ships, 13/6.
- Chippmen**, *sb.* shipmen, 13/10.
- Churchey**, *sb.* churchyard, 71/26; church-hay, 63/32.
- Clene**, *adv.* clean, quite, entirely, 146/7.
- Clenly**, *adv.* cleanly, quite, wholly, 121/3, 145/15; clenlych, 120/3.
- Clepynge**, *sb.* calling, call, 76/2.
- Clewe**, *vb.* cleft, clave, 31/34, 71/32.
- Clos**, *sb.* close, enclosed land, 10/5.
- Come**, *sb.* arrival, coming, 108/15, 120/30; comys, 109/15.
- Comerous**, *adj.* cumbrous, difficult to pass, 54/8.
- Comynly**, *adv.* in common, together, 34/33, 38/30.
- Condicones**, *sb.* 125/15; theves, 124/15.
- Conquestre**, *sb.* conquest, 56/22. O. Fr.
- Constytucions**, *sb.* constitutions, laws, 64/26.
- Cornelis**, *sb.* crenelles, battlements, 16/31.
- Corpus domini**, *sb.* mass-wafer, 52/23.
- Coste**, *sb.* purpose (R.), 68/4, 74/17.
- Costes**, *sb.* coasting-vessels, 80/5.
- Croice**, *sb.* cross, 36/29; cros, 37/29. O. Fr. *crois*.
- Croun**, *sb.* crown of the head, 42/27; croune, 42/24.
- Culuertnesse**, *sb.* falseness, villainy, 126/31.
- Cytteyns**, *sb.* citizens, 122/27. O. Fr. *citeien*; *citayn*.
- Dawes**, *sb.* days, out of d. = out of life, 34/10, 76/4.
- Defended**, *vb.* = defendeth, let us defend, *imper.*, 20/28.
- Defeuily**, *vb.* defoul, tread under foot, 35/29; defouly, 34/29.
- Dele**, *sb.* deal, part, 62/21.
- Deled**, *vb.* dealt, divided, 104/25.
- Delycion**, ? *sb.* daintiness, 98/13.
- Delycious**, *adj.* delicate, dainty, 99/14.
- Demyd**, *pp.* deemed, doomed, sentenced, 35/15.
- Dennysh**, 46/17; Danish.
- Derne**, *adj.* hidden, 18/30, 114/22.
- Dernely**, *adv.* secretly, privily, 78/8.
- Derward**, *adj.* dearworth, precious, 110/34; derwarthest, most valuable, 36/25.
- Destrued**, *pp.* destroyed, 106/10.
- Deue**, *adj.* deaf, 44/13.
- Deynously**, *adv.* disdainfully, 72/3.
- Didden**, *dydde*, *vb.* See *Do*.
- Do**, *vb.* put, 30/6, 38/34, 94/16; turn, 76/6; done hym on, set him on, 100/3; didde, *past t.* turned, 16/31; didden, set, 10/1; dydde, set, 70/7.

- Dobbe**, *vb.* dub, 94/13.
Dome, *sb.* judgment, 34/14.
Dotous, *adj.* doubtful, uncertain, 86/17; doutos, 87/17; doutouse, 24/13.
Doute, *vb.* fear, 24/15.
Drawen, *vb.* protract, lead, 50/4.
Dredlyche, *adj.* dreadly, dreadful, terrible, 114/9.
Drent, *vb.* drowned, 32/5.
Durke, *adj.* dark, 50/9.
Durknesse, *sb.* darkness, 50/10.
Durre, *sb.* door, 42/22.
Dyd, *vb.* set, placed, 74/29. See *Do*.
Dynt, *sb.* dint, stroke, 46/17.
Dysheryted, *vb.* 40/20; disinherited.
 D for *th*, 16/34.
Day, *pron.* they, 10/19, 12/21, 24/10.
Drogh, *prep.* through, 12/24, 14/8, 18/9, 22/7.
I-Drow, *pp.* thrown, 18/1.
Dynge, *sb.* thing, 88/27.
- Eche**, *vb.* increase, 146/4.
Edwyte, *vb.* reproved, twitted, rebuked, 60/9.
Eft, *adv.* after, 82/13, 88/26, 90/1 eft, 108/29.
Elde, *sb.* old, age, 58/30.
Eldren, (*adj.*)? *sb.* forefathers' (or ancestral), 38/17; eldryñ, 39/17.
Eldrone, *sb.* ancestors, 28/6, 7; eldryn, 29/6, 7.
Elf (*fare*), 17/13; *helf* (*fare*), 16/14; elves' doings.
Eme, *sb.* eam, nephew, 31/14, 73/35; emys, 15/33, 101/15.
Enchesoun, *sb.* occasion, cause, 88/2, 20/16.
Encombremment, *sb.* encumberment, obstruction, annoyance, harm, 22/13.
Eneche, *vb.* (? increase) inech, im-plant, 92/1.
Engyn, *sb.* art, contrivance, 18/28.
Ense, *sb.* ends, 80/29.
Entre, *sb.* entry, 54/6; entrest, 55/7.
Entredyte, *vb.* interdict, lay under interdict, 68/15.
Enuy, *sb.* envy, 20/19.
Enuyouse, *adj.* envious, 114/6; en-uyouse, emulous, 100/2.
Er, *adv.* ere, before, 120/29.
Erne, *vb.* earn, mourn, 34/28.
- Erne**, *sb.* eagle, 114/18.
Ers, *sb.* ears, 15/24.
Erthe-weyes, *sb.* ways under ground, 19/30.
Erth-hous, *sb.* underground dwelling, 120/31.
Estren, *adj.* eastern, east, 28/27.
Ette, *vb.* ate, 89/22.
Eunynge, *sb.* evening, equal, peer, 54/19.
Evynocrystyñ, *sb.* fellow - christian, 39/11, 67/14.
Exstymacioun, *sb.* suspicion, 129/14. O. Fr. *exstimation*.
Eygne, *sb.* eyes, 97/17.
- Facon**, *sb.* falcon, 58/4; faucoun gentel, 56/30.
Fale, *adj.* fele, many, 74/10, 86/4.
Falthyr, *sb.* fautors, favorers, partisans, 79/7. Fr. *fauteur*.
Fantstones, *sb.* fontstones, stone fonts, 64/33; fantstonys, 65.
Farcostes, *sb.* far-coasters?, 80/5, 81/5.
Fawes, *sb.* falls?, heavy, things dropt, 96/2; fawis, 97/2.
Febelier, *adj.* more feeble, 69/5.
Fele, *adj.* many, 16/10.
Felony, *sb.* villany, 102/3.
ffer, *adv.* f. within-yn nyght, far into the night, 16/9.
Ferd, *sb.* host, army, 14/5.
Ferde, *sb.* fear, 17/14.
Ferdnesse, *sb.* fear, fright, 20/29, 38/27.
Ferly, *adj.* strange, 16/29.
Ferly, *adv.* wonderfully?, 16/12.
Fersly, *adv.* fiercely, 17/11.
Ferth, *num. adj.* fourth, 118/19.
Festnen, *vb.* make firm, restore, 44/14.
Feynte, *adj.* faint, idle, 115/6.
Feyre, *adv.* far, 50/34.
Fikyllid, *vb.* temporised, 145/9.
Fleted, *vb.* floated, 116/26.
Fletes, *sb.* fleets, 80/9; flittes, 81/9; flot, 126/23; flytte, 127/23.
Fleysly, *adj.* fleshly, fleshy, 100/1.
Flittes, *sb.* See *Fletes*.
Flote, *sb.* fleet, herd of swine, 74/1.
Flowen, *vb.* fled, 96/21.
Fobler, *adj.* feebler, 68/6.
Foderes, *sb.* deceivers, 148/3.

Folk, *adj.* † for foble, feeble, 50/15.
Folke-mele, indiscriminately, 36/3.
Foolrede, *sb.* fool's counsel, foolery, folly, 68/20; fooly, 69.
Foot-falle, *vb.* prostrate oneself, 62/18.
For, *conj.* in order that, 104/24.
Foreleue, *vb.* cleft, 58/2; for-clew, 59/2.
Fore-lete, *vb.* let go, 68/29.
For-hold, *pp.* withheld, kept unburied, 108/14.
Forlese, *vb.* forelost, lost, 54/11.
Formane, *sb.* leader, 36/1; formene, front ranks, 30/33.
Forme, *adj.* first, 64/15; formest, *super.*, 50/28; formyst, 51.
Forshape, *pp.* misshapen, 130/25.
Forsoke, *vb.* renounce, refuse, decline, 4/13, 78/17; for-sok, 72/16.
Forsoken, *vb.* declined, 104/12.
Forswely, *vb.* swallow up, 58/27.
Fort, *conj.* till, 84/27, 126/11.
Fortelet, *sb.* fortlet, 116/6.
Forth, (before 'with') *adv.* forthwith, 20/5, 90/20, 104/32.
For-pane, *conj.* Nat f. notwithstanding, 4/1.
For-they, *conj.* therefore, 73/22; ffor-thy, 72/23.
Forthmost, *adj.* foremost, 16/4.
Forme, *sb.* form, 39/12.
Forwarde, *sb.* bargain, 10/12; agreement, 74/9, 108/30; forward-makynge, *m.* of agreements, 128/9.
Fourdyr, *adv.* further, 15/25.
Franchise, *sb.* freedom, 20/15.
Fresly, *adv.* fiercely, 14/12, 35/34; fressely, 81/9.
Frightnes, *sb.* fright, 16/15, 26.
Fryst, *num.* first, 17/4, 31/33.
Fyf, *num. adj.* five, 62/21; fywe, 63/21.
Fylth(e), *sb.* filthhead, filthiness, 64/6, 65/6.
Fyne, *sb.* fine, 66/10.

Galosis, *sb.* gallows, 35/16.
Galyotz, *sb.* pirates †, 22/32.
Garnesynd, *pp.* garnished, fortified, 51/1. Fr. *garnir*.
Gentil, *sb.* gentry, set, 101/17.
Gentryce, *sb.* set, clan, 112/2.

Gentrye, *sb.* gentry, 100/18.
Gestes, *sb.* deeds, 120/10.
Gettynges, *sb.* gettings, gain, plunder, 26/34.
Girliche, *adv.* terribly, 14/22 (? *adj.*).
Good, *sb.* goods, 54/5.
Grad, *vb.* cried out, 4/1.
Griped, *vb.* griped, gripped, 126/26.
Grewid, *vb.* grieved, pained, 109/9; *grewid*, *pp.* 39/25.
Grymly, *adj.* dreadful, terrible, 59/13.
Gylte, *sb.* fault, 40/8.
Gyued, *vb.* gyved, fettered, 60/10; gywid, 61/10.

Half, *sb.* side; *ethers h.*, either side, 8/19; *euersch h.*, every side, 4/16; *euiche h.*, each side, 5/18; *hys h.*, his side, 24/32; *oon h.*, one side, 22/25; a south h., on the south side, 30/16; on his moþer half, on his mother's side, 8/15; *halue*, *pl.* 100/21.
Halte, *vb.* held, 64/10; *holte*, hold, 64/11.
Halowene, *sb.* saints, 122/1; *halwene*, 44/11.
Hame, *pron.* them, 4/12.
Hamlynge, *adj.* ambling, 89/21.
Hand, *sb.* other h., second hand, 78/17.
Har, *pron.* their, 9/17, 10/20, 74/31, 120/30; *hars*, 31/14; *theirs*, 32/15.
Har, *adv.* ere, sooner.
Hard, *pp.* heard, 29/32.
Hardynes, *sb.* hardness, boldness, 110/35.
Haris, *pron.* theirs, 49/33; *hars*, 48/34.
Hauteyne, *adj.* haughty, 76/16. O. Fr. *hautain*.
Haw, *vb.* have, 34/7; *hawdyn*, had, 27/7.
Haye, *sb.* hay, haw, churchyard, 63/32; 62/32.
Hedid, *pp.* headed, beheaded, 151/8.
Heed, *sb.* † head, 78/33; *heeddes*, heads, princes †, 34/28.
Heere, *sb.* hair, hair-cloth, 42/5; here, 43/5.
Hegh, *vb.* hight ('was callid'), 92/23.
Hegheste, *adj.* highest ('host' 12/33), 13/33.
Heghlygh, *adv.* highly, 90/25.
Helf far, 16/14, *sb.* elves' doing.

- Helle**, *vb.* helde, 2/24.
Hellen, *vb.* conceal, hide, 78/1.
Hent, *vb.* received, 10/35; henten, grasp, seize, 56/33, 80/26.
Herbrowe, *vb.* harbour, seek shelter, 66/6.
Here, *pron.* their, 18/29.
Here, *adv.* here, 32/10.
Herly, *adv.* early, 70/7.
Herne, *sb.* nook, corner, 116/7.
Herrer, *sb.* herre, lord, 116/30.
Herth, *sb.* heart, 2/8, 22/28, 50/20.
Hertly, *adj.* earthly, 66/4.
Hertly, *adv.* heartily, courageously, 52/2; hertely, 53/2.
Het, *vb.* was named, 2/3.
Heudes, *sb.* heads, 14/17.
Hey, *adj.* high, 57/29.
Heye, *sb.* 70/27. See *Church-hey*.
Heyth, *adj.* high, noble, 22/32.
Hite, *pron.* it, 25/20.
Hoft-sithes, *adv.* oftentimes, 16/14.
Hold, *adj.* whole, faithful, 60/14; holde, whole, healthy, 59/24.
Homward, *adv.* take h., go home, 86/3.
Hoped, *vb.* looked to, trusted in, had confidence in, 70/22.
Horynesse, *sb.* filthiness, 66/27. Comp. *horowe*, foul, used by Chaucer, pronounced *horry* in Devon. H.
Host, *sb.* army, 16/10, 11, 104/26, 144/2.
Host, *adj.*? hest, hext, highest, largest, 12/32.
Hostyngis, *sb.* expeditions, annies, 17/14.
Hungrod, *adj.* hungered, hungry, 116/8.
Hurtyng, *sb.* hurting, hurt, 16/34.
Hym, *pron.* him; hym bridesom, comp. Gr. *αὐτὸς τῆρος*, 14/1, 32/20.
Hyrynge, *adj.* hireling, waged, 22/31.
Iappyng, *sb.* japing, jesting, 54/26; Iappyng, 55/27.
I-banseth, *pp.* banished, 24/1; y-banshet, 25/1.
I-bydde, *pp.* abided, stayd, 62/8.
I-corne, *pp.* chosen, 22/18.
I-deleth, *pp.* dealt, divided, 66/19.
I-destrued, *pp.* destroyed, 84/32.
I-dobbed, *pp.* dubbed, 94/13.
I-drow, *pp.* thrown, d=th, 18/1.
I-dyght, *pp.* prepared, 58/19.
I-endeth, *pp.* ended, 22/16.
I-flow, *pp.* fled, 46/27.
I-fulled, *pp.* baptized, 64/33; yfullid, 65/33.
I-garnset, *pp.* garnished, fortified, 50/1.
I-hard, *pp.* heard, 28/32.
I-heded, *pp.* beheaded, 150/7.
I-helled, *pp.* iheled, covered, 10/21.
I-herberged, *pp.* filled, stowed, 108/34; I-herbergide, 109/34.
I-herberowide, *pp.* harboured, sheltered, 63/31; I-horberowed, 62/31.
I-hodet, *pp.* hooded, 132/28.
I-hokred, *pp.* insulted, 140/16.
I-horied, *pp.* defiled, 138/32.
I-hosted, *pp.* hosted, quartered, 16/9.
I-lacet, *pp.* laced, 10/17.
Illy, *adv.* in an ill way, 78/7.
Ilyche, *adv.* alike, 66/19.
I-meygnet, *pp.* mingled, 102/27.
Inamliche, *adv.* namely, especially, 16/28.
In-leyde, *pp.* laid in, 37/21.
I-primseined, *pp.* catechized, 64/32, 65/32.
I-quenyted, *pp.* pleased, 36/35.
I-rettet, *pp.* charged with, 68/26.
I-roted, *pp.* rooted, 20/27, 112/3, 148/18.
I-sacred, *pp.* sacred, consecrated, 132/28.
I-scomfyte, *pp.* discomfited, 116/20.
I-shent, *pp.* ruined, 68/28, 38/16.
I-shwerne, *pp.* sworn, 24/26.
I-slawe, *pp.* slain, 80/13.
I-stablet, *pp.* established, 64/27.
I-storbet, *pp.* disturbed, 124/34.
I-suywed, *pp.* issued, shot, 116/9.
I-swewed, *pp.* showed, 64/12.
I-told, *pp.* reckoned, 2/4.
I-wepned, *pp.* armed, 80/11.
I-worth, *pp.* become, 102/6, 148/14.
I-wyted, *pp.* blamed, 8/13.
Kappe, *sb.* 46/17; lappe, R. 47/17.
Karue, *vb.* k. of, cut off, 14/23.
Kene, *adj.* keen, fierce, sharp, 112/33.
Kepyng, *sb.* keeping, watch, guard, 53/10; kypyng, 52/9.

- Kernel**, *sb.* battlement, 10/28.
Knyghten, *sb.* knights', 92/15.
Kynde, *sb.* kind, nature; of k., by nature, naturally, 18/27; Through k. of Troy, Through our Trojan origin, 22/26.
Kynde, *adj.* natural, own, 6/27.
Kyndly, *adj.* kindly, natural, 76/16.
Kyndly, *adv.* kindly, naturally, by birth, 22/28; kyndlych, 22/24.
Kynly, *adv.* by kin, by birth, 23/24. See *Kyndly*.
Laked, *vb.* enjoyd, 132/29; lakyd, 133/29.
Large, *adj.* bounteous, generous, 25/2; largh, 24/1.
Laser, *sb.* lazar, leper, 44/13.
Lastes, *sb.* faults, deceits, 102/21.
Latest, *adj.* last in place, 52/1.
Lede, *adj.* folk, 4/24; leed, 64/18.
Lef, *adj.* dear, 108/8; lefe, 111/34.
Lered, *adj.* learned, 42/2; lerid, 43/2.
Leth, *vb.* let, hindered, 52/7; leth, allowed, causd, 64/5.
Lette, *sb.* let, hindrance, 94/5.
Leue, *adj.* dear, 108/6.
Leue, *vb.* leave, omit, 108/10.
Leuet, *vb.* loved, 118/35.
Lewed, *adj.* lewd, uneducated, vulgar, 42/2; lewid, 48/2.
Lewidly, *adv.* lewdly, wickedly, 47/30.
Leyden, *vb.* leyden on, laid on, attacked, 96/2; leydyn, 97/2.
Lif, *adj.* lief, pleasing, 8/22.
Lodderly, *adv.* wickedly, 22/33.
Lodesmane, *sb.* pilot, leader, 22/21; 86/28.
Loge, *sb.* lodge, wattled hut, 10/3.
Loghe, *adj.* low, short, 88/10.
Loly, *adj.* grim, terrible, 40/8, 58/12.
Lolych, *adj.* lovely, affable, 103/18; lolyelyche, 102/18.
Lome, *adv.* often, frequently, 44/36.
Lost, *sb.* loss, 112/23; loste, 146/12; lostes, 8/2; lostis, 97/24; Lostys, 9/2.
Loth, *adj.* hateful, unpleasant, 14/6, 30/19.
Lotles, *adj.* buxom, obedient, 114/4.
Lout, *vb.* l. ham, lout themselves, do obeisance, 44/26.
Lowe, *sb.* love, 131/14.
Lych, *sb.* like, body, 88/26; lyche, 89.
Lyddere, *adj.* lither, bad, wicked, 44/6, 68/7; lyder, 32/14.
Lyddyryly, *adv.* litherly, wickedly, 46/30.
Lyddernysse, *sb.* litherness, wickedness, 76/29.
Lygne, *adj.* gentle?, 102/17.
Lyket, *vb.* was liked, pleasd, 34/14.
Lyme, *sb.* limit, bond?, 62/18.
Lyue, *sb.* life, 82/32.
Manequelleres, *sb.* mankillers, 125/16.
Maner, *sb.* manner; many m. metes, many kind of meats, 62/28; manners, politeness, 22/10.
Mane-shipe, *sb.* manship, courtesy, 4/33; manshype, 70/12.
Manly, *adv.* in a manly way, 24/6.
Manred, *sb.* homage, 56/20.
Man-shyply, *adv.* worshipfully, reverently, 66/22.
Manslagentres, *sb.* manslaughterers, 124/16.
Mansynge, *sb.* cursing, excommunication, 120/17.
Marche, *sb.* march, border, 72/18; 146/31.
Mayny, *sb.* 115/22. See *Meignè*.
Me, *pron.* men (comp. German *man*), one, they, 16/5, 24/14, 32/27, 42/10, 70/33.
Meet-yeuer, *sb.* meat-giver, 54/25; met-yeuer, 112/36. Comp. *metegavel*.
Meignè, *sb.* household troops, 22/18; menny, 79/28; mennye, 79/13; meny, 115/10; meygnees, 66/5; meyne, 26/8; meynne, 39/5; meyngne, 27/9. O. Fr. *meignee*, *meyne*.
Mekely, *adv.* humbly, kindly, 48/2.
Membres, *sb.* manly m., manly members, privy parts, 44/18.
Merres, *sb.* meres, boundaries, 38/17.
Meste, *adv.* most, 42/7.
Mesury, *sb.* misery, 43/15.
Meteful, *adj.* moderate, 113/24. See *Methefull*.
Methe, *sb.* moderation, 98/12.
Mothefull, *adj.* moderate, 112/24.
Methelyche, *adj.* moderate, 70/18;

- methlych, 98/28; metlych, 76/15; metlyche, 98/10; middle-sized.
- Mich**, *adj.* much, large, 34/27; mich yuell, much or great evil, leprosy, 32/7.
- Modelyng**, *sb.* meddling, 56/18.
- Mone**, *sb.* moan, complaint, 28/23.
- Morowenyng**, *sb.* morning, 82/21.
- Most**, *vb.* must, could, 40/22.
- Mostdele**, *adv.* mostdeal, mostly, 16/1.
- Mostwhat**, *adv.* mostly, for the most part, 88/17.
- Mother-church**, *sb.* cathedral, 36/29.
- Motyng**, *sb.* mooting, pleading, disputing, 144/29.
- Mych**, *adj.* large, 56/29, 74/1; myche, 74/2.
- Myght & mayn**, might & main, 116/15.
- Mynyed**, *vb.* reminded, warned, 74/29, 84/25.
- Mys-byfelle**, *vb.* misbefell, fell amiss, 124/15; mys-be-felle, 125/16.
- Mysdone**, *vb.* misdo, 101/32.
- Myse-lyckenys**, *sb.* mislikeness, strange shape (a wolf-woman), 131/25.
- Myssayse**, *sb.* misese, 40/5. O. Fr. *mesaise*.
- Myssayse**, *adj.* misesead, 114/23; myssaysid, 115/22.
- Na**, *adv.* not, 112/2.
- Name**, *sb.* name, 6/33.
- Name**, *vb.* took, 6/12; name, 2/22, 23; n. an hand, 72/24; namen, 80/4; n. sekernesse, took surety, 74/8.
- Namely**, *adv.* especially, 52/17, 66/4.
- Namy**, *vb.* name, 130/10.
- Narow**, *adv.* narrowly, closely, 40/21; narowe, 4/19; narrow, 41/22, 97/10.
- Naroweis**, narrow ways, 81/26.
- Nas**, *vb.* ne was, was not, 16/21, 26/21, 72/16, 114/8.
- Nat forthy**, *conj.* notwithstanding, nevertheless, 76/20, 77/22.
- Nathales**, *conj.* nevertheless, 78/10.
- Neb**, *sb.* (? nose), face, *vultus*, 98/11.
- Neght**, *adv.* nigh, nearly, 26/13.
- Nembre**, *sb.* number, 101/22; nenbre, 100/23.
- Ner**, *vb.* ne were, were not, 30/31, 100/8.
- Neue**, *sb.* nephew, 14/33. See *eme*.
- Neuer** (ne were), *vb.* should never be, 121/18; neuere, 120/18.
- Never no more**, 48/31.
- Neyght**, *adv.* nigh, near, 74/16.
- Nobelych**, noblych, *adv.* nobly, 35/29, 34/29.
- Noon-dayes**, *sb.* noonday, 50/32.
- North**, by n., to the north of, 70/26.
- Nuy**, *sb.* noy, vexation, affliction, 90/7. Comp. *noxia*.
- Nyst**, ne wist, knew not, 4/29.
- Nythe**, *sb.* a nythe = at night, 72/33.
- O**, *num.* one, 106/12; oo, 89/26, 106/12.
- O**, *prep.* of, 108/34.
- Of**, *adv.* off, 12/11, 14/23, 32/4, 74/32.
- Oftere**, *adv.* oftener, 54/22.
- Oke**, *vb.* ached, paind, 108/9.
- Omost**, omyste, *adv.* overmost, uppermost, 106/1, 107/1.
- Ond**, *sb.* hatred, malice, 110/30; onde, 111/30.
- Onful**, *adj.* ondfull, malicious, 102/24; onfull, 103/24.
- Onper**, *prep.* under, 6/31.
- Opyn**, *adj.* open, uncovered, 42/22.
- Ordeynly**, *adv.* well o. = in good order, 46/12.
- Ortrow**, *sb.* overtrow, mistrust, suspicion, 128/14, 132/14; artrow, 133.
- Ost**, *adj.* burnt?, 50/2.
- Ostmen**, *sb.* hostmen, soldiers, 82/23.
- Ostyng**, *sb.* hosting, expedition, 16/14; see *Hostyngis*.
- Oper**, *conj.* other, or, 24/6.
- Other**, *adj.* second, 50/29, 76/12, 88/8.
- Ouerd[r]ede**, *vb.* ouerdrede, over-dreaded, 14/20.
- Ouergoste**, *vb.* goest beyond, 38/17.
- Ouer-hand**, *sb.* upperhand, superiority, 34/6, 50/11, 106/3, 118/23.
- Ouersaille**, *vb.* sail over, upset?, 16/12.
- Ouerthrowen**, *vb. pass.* be prostrated, 62/21.
- Ouer-truste**, *sb.* overboldness, presumption, 22/10. Comp. *Overhope*.
- Oure**, *pron.* ours, 24/7, 96/15.
- Out-chese**, *vb.* choose out, 34/8.
- Out-commyn**, *adj.* come from foreign parts, 12/29; out-comen, 18/5.
- Out-tak**, *pp.* outtaken, except, 122/8.

- Owne**, *adj.* = own house, tent, 62/31.
Owre, *prep.* over, 130/2.
Ows, *pron.* us, 22/3, 30.
- Paas**, *sb.* pass, 104/22; pas, 104/25; paace, 55/9.
Panetrye, *sb.* pantry, 62/27. Fr. *paneterie*.
Pany, *sb.* penny, 92/5.
Paralys, *adj.* paralysed folk, 44/14.
Parlement, *sb.* conference, 6/21, 18/11, 72/31. O. Fr. *parlement*.
Party, *sb.* part, side, 110/1.
Party arms, arms vertically divided, 10/4.
Pilfre, *sb.* pilfer, plunder, 52/8. O. Fr. *pelfrer*.
Pledynge, *sb.* suing, 112/20.
Plenary, *adv.* fully, openly, 31/27.
Pleneden, *vb.* sported, 74/18; pleydyn, 75.
Plente, *sb.* generosity, 102/31.
Plete, *sb.* plate, 46/10.
Poere, *sb.* power, O. Fr. 48/11.
Postes, *sb.* pillars, supports, 120/6.
Powere, *sb.* forces, 2/22, 4/17.
Prayes, *sb.* preys, booty, 80/1.
Prayes-takyng, *sb.* taking of booty, 78/27; pray-takyng, 118/11.
Praye, *vb.* prey, plunder, 80/3, 23; preedyn, plundered, 81/3.
Presons, *sb.* prisoners, 54/5, 15.
Primseine, *vb.* 'sign with the cross, make a catechumen,' 64/32.
Pruisant, *adj.* foreseeing?, 80/28.
Prout, prout, *adj.* proud, 22/5, 38/20.
Prow, *vb.* prove, 85/5.
Prutter, *adj.* prouder, 56/7.
Pullid, *vb.* plundered, robbed, 145/9.
Pullyng, *sb.* pilling, plundering, 112/21.
Purueynge, *adj.* provident, prudent, 98/21.
Pute, *sb.* pit, 36/18.
Pylfre, *sb.* pilfer, plunder, pillage, 80/4, 114/24. O. Fr. *pelfrer*.
Pynsyng, *sb.* affliction, 88/6.
- Queller**, *sb.* killer, 44/5.
Queme, *vb.* please, satisfy, 54/30, 98/15.
Quenyntyse, *queyntyse*, *sb.* cunning, craft, 98/22, 99/22. O. Fr. *quointise*.
- Quethene**, *vb.* overcome R., 44/15.
Queynt, *adj.* cunning, sly, wily, 26/1, 98/21; qnent, 27/1; queynth, 128/2.
Quyte, *adj.* quit, clear, free, 96/20.
Quynten, *pp.* free, clean away, 80/27.
- Raas**, *sb.* race, rush, 16/12.
Radyr, *adv.* rather, more willingly, 7/13; earlier, before, 91/20.
Raght, *vb.* raught, recked, 32/9.
Ran, *vb.* r. to harme. 112/26.
Rascayll, *sb.* rascal, rabble, 50/21. O. Fr. *rascayle*.
Rathe, *adv.* soon, 24/29, 84/1; rather, sooner, 28/23, 68/14; before, 90/20, 130/4.
Rather, *adj.* earlier, previous, original, 86/4, 88/2.
Raunceoun, *sb.* ransom, 46/29.
Rebuked, *vb.* repulsed, checked, 34/34.
Recet, *sb.* refuge, harbour, 18/29, 30/28, 56/5; recette, 19/29, 31/28.
Recheste, *vb.* reckest, 108/9.
Rede, *sb.* counsel, 10/18, 68/33.
Remewid, *vb.* removed, 147/13.
Rere, *vb.* rear, raise, exalt, 46/2; rerid, took, captured, lifted, 107/30.
Rescewyd, *vb.* received, 123/27.
Reue, *vb.* rob, 114/3; rew, 115/3.
Reuer, *sb.* riever, robber, 112/21.
Reut, *sb.* ruth, pity, 8/1; reuth, 22/34, 54/18.
Reuthful, *adj.* ruthless, 32/23.
Reuyng, *sb.* rieving, plundering, 144/31; rewyng, 145/25; reyuyng, 145/32.
Rewe, *vb.* rue, regret, 146/1.
Robbed, *vb.* plundered, 80/23.
Rodes, *sb.* r. crucyfied, crucifixes, 122/1.
Roghly, *adv.* r. lokyng, rough looking, 88/9.
Row, *adv.* r. lokyng, rough looking, 89/9. A. S. *rúw*.
Ruthlyng, *sb.* rattling, 16/13.
Rychesse, *sb.* riches, 96/24. Fr. *richesse*.
Rygge, *sb.* back, 58/2.
Ryght, *vb.* r. vp, raise up, 44/3; set up again, restore, 86/4.
Ryuely, *adv.* especially?, 128/12.

- Salletis**, *sb.* sallets, light helmets, 11/24.
- Sam-crysp**, *adj.* somewhat curled, 98/11; *sam-roed*, *adj.* somewhat ruddy, 54/27; *same rede*, 89/8; *saun-rede*, 88/8. A. S. *sam*, half.
- Saue**, *vb.* saw, 49/6, 146/11.
- Sawe**, *prep.* save, except, 18/21, 54/10.
- Sawe**, *vb.* save, 73/6; *sawit*, saved, 4/23.
- Schavnge**, *sb.* change, 51/6.
- Scomfited**, *pp.* discomfited, 117/19.
- Screwid**, *adj.* shrewd, cursed, bad, evil, 69/6.
- See way**, *seaway* (comp. highway, roadway), 80/3.
- Seke**, *adj.* sick, 66/13.
- Sekerneſſe**, *sb.* security, 74/8; *syke[r]-neſſe*, 50/7.
- Sekiriteſſe**, *sb.* securities, bonds, 6/22.
- Selcouth**, *adj.* various, 28/33; wonderful, 44/11, 120/1, 126/13.
- Selth**, *sb.* happiness, benefit, 50/8, 92/18; success, 98/23.
- Selue**, *adj.* same, 100/18.
- Selyly**, *adv.* happily, 42/32.
- Semblant**, *glad s.*, 98/12; *sterne s.*, 98/27; *ſayr s.*, 102/18; *semblant*, 112/36; look, countenance.
- Senne**, *sb.* synod, 120/15.
- Senthe**, *adj.* seventh, 58/30; *Senfte*, 59/29.
- Seysyne**, *sb.* seisin, possession, 82/12.
- Sheldrun**, *sb.* shields, 31/29.
- Shendshype**, *sb.* injury, harm, 114/3; *shenſhipp*, 115/3.
- Sho**, *pron.* she, 4/1.
- Shorthlych**, *adv.* shortly, presently, 114/22.
- Shroue**, *vb. int.* confessed, 130/23.
- Shyrth**, *sb.* shirt, 42/5.
- Sill**, *vb.* sell, 39/34. See *Syllene*.
- Sitè**, *sb.* city, 32/17, 18.
- Sithe**, *sb.* times, 26/6.
- Skyer**, *sb.* squire, 8/32, 33.
- Slaght**, *sb.* slaughter, 14/16, 20/28, 116/36, 138/32.
- Slaked**, *vb.* slacked, failed, 48/24.
- Sleghly**, *adv.* slyly, 68/3.
- Sleghtes**, *sb.* contrivances, 128/13.
- Sleghthlych**, *adv.* craftily, 128/9; *sleghly*, 144/17.
- Slouedyne**, *vb.* slew, 39/8.
- Smert**, *adj.* smart, sharp, rough; smert lond, rough wild land, 128/29.
- Smertly**, *adv.* smartly, vigorously, 104/33; *smyrtly*, 105/33.
- Smyth**, *vb.* smite, 24/12; *pt.* smote, 106/35.
- Snel**, *adj.* quick, active, 74/27.
- Snellych**, *adv.* quickly, 82/3.
- Soine**, *adv.* soon, 60/11.
- Soldrys**, *sb.* shoulders, 89/11.
- Solempnelych**, *adv.* solemnly, 90/25.
- Soth**, *adj.* sooth, true, 54/1.
- Sortelych**, *adv.* shortly, 93/14; *Sortely*, *adv.* shortly, 149/22.
- Soryneſſe**, *sb.* sorriness, soreness, sorrow, 110/1, 112/23.
- Spares**, *sb.* battle-axe, 83/7; *ſparris*, 17/12. See *Sparth*.
- Sparth**, *sb.* battle-axe, 74/11, 26, 33; *ſparthes*, 16/13.
- Spendynge**, *sb.* spending, money, 78/27.
- Spourges**, *sb.* spurge, thing to get rid of, scourge, 112/3. Comp. O. Fr. *espourger*.
- Spousbrych**, *sb.* spousebreach, adultery, 102/23.
- Spousehede**, *spouſhede*, *sb.* wedded state, 64/30.
- Sproty**, *adj.* thin, small, 54/28. Comp. *Sprot*, sprout, splinter.
- Stabil**, *vb.* establish, confirm, 69/29; *stable*, 68/30.
- Staluarthly**, *adv.* stalwartly, sturdily, 116/1.
- Stalwardneſſe**, *sb.* stalwartness, strength, sturdiness, 52/2; *stalwardneſſe*, 54/20.
- Sted**, *sb.* stead, place, state, 22/35; 'state,' 23/35.
- Stordy**, *adj.* sturdy, 118/33; *ſtordyer*, 116/2.
- Storkes**, *sb.* storks, 28/24.
- Strange**, *adj.* strong, 54/8.
- Streynth**, *vb.* strength, strengthen, 68/30.
- Streynth**, *sb.* strength, force, meaning, 90/29, 96/14.
- Streynneſſe**, *sb.* strongness, strength, 94/24; *ſtreynyns*, 95/24.
- Stronge**, *adj.* strong, stormy, 66/33.

- Stronge**, *adv.* strongly, greatly, 4/3.
Stryfly, *adv.* strivingly (? for 'styfly'), 26/29. See *Styfly*.
Styd, *sb.* stead, place, 42/5; *stydde*, 42/6; *styddes*, places, 50/11.
Styfly, *adv.* strongly, valiantly, 80/8, 104/31.
Stylyl, *adv.* stily, in secret, 46/19, 150/12.
Stynte, *vb.* stopped, 111/30; *stynt*, 112/30.
Suget, *adj.* subject, 24/21; *subyect*, 26/33; *subyett*, 26/21. O. Fr. *Suget*.
Surnesse, *sb.* sureness, security, 51/7.
Surtey, *swrte*, *sb.* surety, 75/9. Fr. *Sûreté*.
Sybbe, *sb.* relation, 64/29.
Sybynges, *adv.* kinwise, with relatives, 102/23.
Sybrede, *sb.* relationship, 42/11.
Sydyngge, *adv.* sidling, obliquely, 94/19.
Sygge, *vb.* say, 54/18, 98/20.
Sykernesse, *sb.* security, 50/7. See *Seckernesse*.
Sykyrlychest, *adv.* most securely, 68/34.
Syllene, *vb.* sell, 38/32, 40/5.
Syller, *sb.* seller, 40/1.
- Talent**, *sb.* desire, wish, 6/25.
Tanked, *pp.* thanked, 14/19.
Tene, *sb.* tene, hatred, 4/12.
Tened, *pp.* grieved, vexed, 4/3.
Tethynges, *sb.* tithings, tithes, 66/1.
Thare, *conj.* there = where, 82/18.
Tharmes, *sb.* entrails, intestines, 88/4.
That, *adv.* I read *thar*, 2/24, 65/5.
Thay, *dem.* those, 80/12, 14, 90/26, 116/3; *they*, *the*, 97/14.
Theghe, *conj.* though, 18/27, 32/9.
Ther, *conj.* where, 32/8, 57/30, 128/4; *ther-to-for*, *adv.* before, 63/29.
Thewes, *sb.* qualities, 16/28, 90/34.
Thewis, *sb.* thieves, 81/30.
Thedyngge, *sb.* tiding, 10/7; *thythyngis*, 11/7, 35/31; *tythyngge*, 6/15.
this, *adj.* these, 21/29.
Tho, *conj.* when, 4/9.
Tho, *prep.* to, 62/19.
Thought, *conj.* though, 15/31, 32/7.
- Tholle**, *vb.* thole, endure, suffer, 4/20; *pollod*, 42/3, 118/24; *tholleth*, *sufferd*, 38/15; *tholy*, *infin.* 40/5.
Tholmode, *adj.* forbearing, 98/15.
Thondred, *sb.* thunder, 58/28.
porwe, I go through with it, 28/12.
Thre, *num.* a three, in three parts, 66/20; at three, 67/20; *tre*, 14/5.
Thretyngge, *sb.* threatening, 60/9; *tretyngge*, 70/9.
priddesum, *adj.* third, 14/1; *thyrd-some*, 32/20; *thyrdesum*, 15/2.
thurleth, *vb.* thirleth, pierceth, 112/5.
Thus, from *t.* = from this, thence, 60/15.
Thwey, *num.* two, 12/35.
To, *adv.* too, 54/26, 82/3.
To, *art.* the, 10/27.
Toght, *vb.* thought, 16/25, 18/7.
To-hakked, *vb.* hacket to pieces, 82/2.
Toke, *vb.* reacht (to the knee), 116/27.
Told, *vb.* reckoned, 60/8; *Moch told* by ham-self, thought much of themselves, 148/3; *tolde*, thought, 94/1, 96/25, 97/24.
Tollid, *pp.* suffered, 39/15.
Ton, *sb.* town, 12/33; *ton land*, *townland*, division of parish, 124/2.
Toun londe, *sb.* townland, township, division of parish, 125/2.
Tre, *adj.* three, 14/5.
Trewege, *sb.* tribute, 114/29; *truage*, 60/15. O. Fr. *treuage*.
Trogh, *prep.* through, 22/6, 26/1, 62/18; *troghe*, 20/24; *troght*, 28/29.
Trukked, *vb.* trucked, was bartered I, 48/9.
Trywly, *adv.* truly, 12/27.
Turnet to, *vb.* turn to, 78/32.
Turues, *sb.* turves, turfs, 30/17.
Twonty, *num.* twenty, 50/28.
Tyngge, *sb.* things, 24/14; *thing*, 28/8; *notyngge*, nothing, 16/5, 20/9.
Tynke, *vb.* think, 6/26; *tynten*, 22/4.
Tywesday, *tywesdaye*, *tyvysday*, *tywysday*, *sb.* Tuesday, 98/1, 99/1, 2.
Vanhope, *sb.* wanhope, despair, 57/5.
Vend, *vb.* wend, 54/15.
Vepne, *sb.* weapon, 110/24.
Vickydly, *adv.* wickedly, 53/35.
Vncharged, *vb.* unloaded, 10/2.

- Vndedde**, *vb.* undid, ruined, 114/4; vndid, 115/4. See *Vndo*.
- Vnderfonge**, *vb.* receive, 62/19; vndrefyng, 4/32, 8/1; vndyrfonge, received, 9/1.
- Vndo**, *vb.* destroy, ruin, 20/6, 22/4, 84/11, 94/32.
- Vndrestondeth**, *vb.* understand ye, *imper.* 20/15.
- Vneuenly**, *adj.* uneven, unequal, inferior, 30/25.
- Vnhap**, *sb.* mishap, 56/5.
- Vnhele**, *sb.* misfortune, 126/12.
- Vnkede**, *adj.* strange, 20/20, 24/28; vnkede, 31/6, 35/2.
- Vnkyndely**, *adv.* unnaturally, 87/18.
- Vnmercably**, *adv.* unmercably, mercilessly, 55/1. Comp. O. Fr. *merciable*.
- Vnmesurable**, *adv.* unmeasurably, beyond measure, 54/26; vnmesurably, 55/26.
- Vnmetly**, *adv.* unmeetly, immoderately, 118/33.
- Vnnowmmerabill**, *adj.* innumerable, 19/15.
- Vnryght**, *sb.* wrong, injustice, 86/18; vnryght, 112/32.
- Vnsikere**, *adj.* unsure, 10/2.
- Vnsurnes**, *sb.* unsureness, insecurity, 51/8.
- Vnwardly**, *adj.* unwary, ignorant, 52/14.
- Vnwarly**, *adv.* unwarely, unexpectedly, 78/9.
- Vnwemmed**, *pp.* unstained, undefiled, 44/7, 92/4; vnwemyd, 93/3.
- Vpon**, *prep.* from, against, 106/32.
- Vp-berid**, *pp.* raised up, 13/2.
- Vptake**, *vb.* succour, help, support, 92/3.
- Vreke**, *vb.* wreak, avenge, 145/8.
- Vs-self**, ourselves, 22/1.
- Vyrchip**, *vb.* worship, 43/20.
- Vyrchipp**, *sb.* worship, 5/32.
- Wanhope**, *sb.* despair, 17/29, 32/12.
- Wanhoply**, *adj.* desperate, 88/6.
- Warliere**, *adv.* more warily, 12/19.
- Waryr**, *adv.* more cautiously, 13/19.
- Warytres**, *sb.* cursed trees, gallows, 34/16; 'galosis,' 35/16.
- Wax**, *vb.* grew, turnd, became, 2/7; arose, grew up, 26/22.
- Wayte**, *sb.* wait, expectation, 110/33.
- Wecchene**, *vb.* move, take, 36/31. A.S. *wecgan*: comp. weigh anchor.
- Wel**, *adv.* well, quite, 52/13; frankly, 78/30; much, 78/32; very, 2/11.
- Wenttene**, *vb.* think, say?, 106/8.
- Wenyng**, *sb.* whining, mourning, 54/17.
- Wepne**, *sb.* weapon, out of w. = out of harness, when not fighting, 54/31; wepyn, 55/31.
- Wepne**, *vb.* weapon, arm, 50/27; weppen, 16/32; wepyn, 17/30.
- Wer**, *vb.* war, 'wer the fight,' 10/27; were, 11/28; weren, *inf.* 82/16; werret, 3/6; werry, *inf.* 8/11; weryn, 83/16.
- Were**, *sb.* war, 125/32.
- Weued**, *sb.* altar, 42/26. A. S.
- Whan**, *vb.* won, 136/11.
- Whan-hopefully**, *adv.* unhopefully, despairingly, 16/30.
- What for**, on account of, 108/21.
- Whodyreso**, *adv.* whithersoever, 40/11.
- Whybelers**, *sb.* quibblers?, 148/3.
- Whyle**, *sb.* the w. = at that time?, 82/13; = *conj.* while, 82/15; That whylle = at that time, 124/20.
- Whyth**, *prep.* with, 130/31.
- Wille**, *adj.* wild, rough, 129/29.
- Willych**, *adv.* vilely, 54/1.
- Wndre**, *prep.* under, 28/7.
- Wnneth**, *conj.* unneth, scarcely, 88/15.
- Wnselfth**, *sb.* disadvantage, 50/8.
- Wo**, *adj.* sorry, 4/35.
- Wode**, *adv.* wildly, madly, 94/34.
- Wodere**, *adj.* wilder, madder, 42/27.
- Woke**, *adj.* weak, 146/10.
- Wolf**, woman turned into a, 130.
- Wombe**, *sb.* belly, 88/4.
- Wonder**, *adj.* wonderful, 130/11.
- Wone**, *sb.* custom, usage, 34/15.
- Wonet**, *pp.* wont, accustomed, 38/33.
- Wonne**, *sb.* custom, 66/29. See *Wone*.
- Wood**, *adj.* mad, wild, 42/27.
- Worth**, *vb.* happened, existed, was, 38/26; became, 124/33.
- Worthly**, (worthy, R.) *vb.* honor, 92/3.
- Worthy**, *vb.* honor, 93/2.

- Wrech**, *sb.* wreak, vengeance, 120/34; wreche, 130/29.
Wrechydnys, *sb.* vengeance, 131/33.
Wrethe, *sb.* wrath, 74/22.
Wreyer, *sb.* wraier, betrayer, 102/24.
Wryttes, *sb.* writs, writings, letters, 56/13; yne wrytte, in writing, 64/7.
Wryyng, *sb.* distorting, falsifying, 102/11.
Wsyd, *pp.* used, accustomed, practist, skilful, 23/27.
Wyage, *sb.* voyage, 62/7.
Wylle, *sb.* at w. = as he wished, 58/22.
Wynd abydyng, wind-bound, waiting for wind, 80/6.
Wyrcshiply, *adv.* worshiply, worshipfully, 67/22.
Wyssed, *vb.* directed, guided, 94/19; wissede, 95/19.
Wyt, *prep.* with, 50/15.
Wytht, *prep.* with, 46/17.
Wyttaylle, *sb.* victual, 104/6.
Wytyng, *sb.* witting, knowledge, 27/3.
-y, *infn.*: See—assembly, castely, de-
 fouly, forswely, namy, tholy, werry, 8/11.
Yardes, *sb.* boughs, sticks, 30/17.
Yarne, *vb.* rushed, ran, 82/3.
Y-cast, *pp.* purposed, 68/30.
Y-douted hym, was afraid, 86/1.
Y-dene, *pp.* done, 28/29.
Y-dropesie, *sb.* dropsy, 44/14.
Yern, *vb.* rush, hasten, 74/1, 76/2.
Yernyng, *vb.* running, rushing, 94/34.
Yew, *vb.* yeve, give, 55/32; yewyn, *pp.* 81/9.
Y-lacet, *pp.* laced, 52/11.
Y-leued, *pp.* believed, 102/10.
Ymeuyd, *pp.* moved, 101/4.
Yold, *sb.* yule, Christmas, 42/34; yolde, 43/34.
Yolowe, *adj.* yellow, 98/10.
Yorne, *adv.* gerne, eagerly, 92/21; yonre, 104/10.
Yought, *sb.* youth, 68/20, 118/27.
Youre, *adj.* yare, active, 114/27.
Yoy, *sb.* joy, 100/29.
Yroked, *pp.* rocked, 42/9.
Y-rotid, *pp.* rooted, 149/17.
Yuel, *mich*, much evil, leprosy, 32/7.
Yurne, *sb.* eagerness?, 112/1.

INDEX

(MAINLY)

BY THOMAS AUSTIN.



(For a completer Index, see Mr. Dimock's, *Gir. Camb. Op.* v. 440-60.)

- Adam of Yarnemouth (Yarmouth), sent with others to Ireland, 102.
- Adrian, Pope, grants privileges in Ireland to Henry II, 90; pledges to, 152.
- Albertus, Cardinal, sent into Normandy to enquire into Becket's death, 68.
- Aldelinesson, *see* Fitz-Audeline.
- Alexander, Lord of the world, 34/3.
- Alexander III, Pope, 44; grants Ireland to Henry II by Bull, 90.
- Amlyffy (? Queenstown), a harbour of Dublin, John the Mad lands there, 46.
- Angoy (Anjou), Henry II Earl of, 6.
- Ardfynan (Archphinan), castle built at, 148/22.
- Armagh, Council of Irish Clergy held there, 38; Archbishop too old to attend Synod of Cashel, 66.
- Arms, the Irish to be forbidden, 152.
- Arthur, kings of Ireland paid him tribute, 136/13.
- Banow, Fitz-stephen lands there, 10.
- Barry, Philip de (brother of Giraldus Cambrensis), comes to Ireland in 1183 to help Fitz-stephen, 126.
- Barry, Robert de, at siege of Wexford, 10; his bravery at Ossory, 14; his character, 16; his courage, 100; is nephew of Maurice and Robert Fitz-stephen, 100. (Was elder brother of Giraldus Cambrensis.)
- Barry, Robert de, son of above Robert, 100.
- Basile, or Basilia, sister of Earl Striguil, marries Raymond Fitz-gerald, 84; writes to her husband, 108.
- Bayonne, the Irish came from, 136.
- Becket, Archbishop of Canterbury, is murdered, 40-44.
- Beggeryng, Isle of, at mouth of Wexford harbour, is occupied by the Irish after burning Wexford, 54.
- Belyn, King of Britain, 136.
- Bernardson, Robert, left as a leader in Ireland by Henry II, 70.
- Berynger, William, sent with others to Ireland, 102.
- Bohun, Humfrey de, left as a leader in Ireland by Henry II, 70.
- Bowmen, sacrilegious, die suddenly, 62.
- Braken, St., prophecy of, 138.
- Breuse (Braose), Philip de, is left at Wexford by Henry II, 70; has land in Limerick granted him by the king, 122; is afraid of attacking Limerick, 124.
- Bride, St., his body found, 150.
- Bristow (Bristol), Macmorgh goes there, 6.
- Brittayne, Brytayn (Britany or Bretagne), story of a Breton ship, 12; Earl of Bretagne (Richard) rebels against his father Henry II, 78.
- Byldewdys (Buildwas), Rolf, Abbot of, attends Synod of Cashel, 64.

- Canterbury, Becket murdered there, 40.
- Cantetone, Reymond de, 100; slain, 148/25.
- Carrick (*Carraig*, a rock), near Wexford, Robert Fitz-stephen builds a castle there, 26; is besieged there, 48.
- Cashel, the Archbishop of, and Henry II, attend Synod there, 64; the Constitutions of Cashel, 64; Earl Striguil goes there, 82; account of the Synod sent to the Pope, 90; the Pass barricaded against the English, 104.
- Castles built in Ireland, 126, 128, 148.
- Chester, Earl of, 86; John, Constable of, 128/12.
- Clandechestre (? Gloucestershire), Henry II goes there, 56.
- Cogan, Miles de, commands at Dublin, 46; drives O'Rourke off from it, 58; returns to Ireland with Fitz-Audeline, 110; invades Connaught, 120; goes to England and returns, 122; has land in Cork given him, 122; at Limerick, 124; is slain at Lismore, 124.
- Cogan, Richard de, brother of Miles, comes with a force into Ireland, 126.
- Columba, St., his prophecies, 116, 118, 138; his body found, 150.
- Comyn, John, Archbishop of Dublin, sent to Ireland to prepare the way for Prince John, 134/1.
- Connaught, Cathel, Archbishop of, is at Synod of Cashel, 64.
- Connaught, Roderick, King of, is an ally of O'Rourke, 4; yields to Henry II, 62; ravages Meath, 82; holds conference with Raymond Fitz-gerald, 106; his territory invaded by Miles de Cogan, 120; Roderick beaten by the English, 122.
- Constitutions of Cashel, 64.
- Cork, men of, defeated at sea by the English, 80; left in charge of Richard of London, 122; lands there divided among the English leaders, 122.
- Cormack, son of the King of Cork, rebels and is beheaded, 106.
- Courci, John de, sees Fitz-Audeline's rascality, and sends for troops to invade Ulster, 114; he takes Down, 114; Vivian tries to get rid of him, 114; besieged, 116; beaten at Firlee, but victorious elsewhere, 118; description of him, 118; is childless, 120; again made Ruler of Ireland, 146/15.
- Coutances, Henry II does penance there for Becket's death, 72.
- Cursed meat forbidden, 66.
- Davy, a Welshman, nephew of Raymond Fitz-gerald, swims the Shannon, 94.
- Dermot Maccarthy, King of Cork, does homage to Henry II, 60; fears to attack Raymond Fitz-gerald, 80; helped by Raymond Fitz-gerald, 106; his son Cormack beheaded, 106; forced to make peace with the English, 122; leaves them, 124; slain, 148-150.
- Dermot Maomorgh, King of Leinster, seduces Rory's wife, Devorgilla, 2; his men refuse to help him, and he seeks foreign aid, 4; Henry II befriends him, 6; agrees to give his daughter, and Leinster to Striguil in return for help, 6; goes to Wales, 6; returns to Ireland and is joined by Robert Fitz-stephen, 8, 10; assaults Wexford, and captures it, 12; invades Ossory, and defeats the Prince, 14; many of his men desert him, 18; is urged to turn against the English, 20; harangues the men of Leinster, 20; O'Connor makes terms with him, 24; goes to attack Dublin, which submits, 26; aspires to be King of Ireland, 28; his daughter is married to Earl Striguil, 36; marches to Dublin, which is captured by him, 36; his son beheaded by O'Connor, King of Connaught, 38; his death, and burial at Ferns, 44; his character, 44.
- Desmond given to Miles de Cogan and Sir Robert Fitz-stephen, 122, 124.
- Deuelyn (Dublin), Laurence, Archbishop of, attends Synod at Cashel, 64; dies at Eu, 14 Nov., 1180, 132;

- John Comyn, Archbishop of, 132/24, 134/1.
- Deuelyn** (Dublin), Macmorgh marches there, and captures it, 26; taken by Raymond Fitz-gerald and Miles of Cogan, 36; Earl Striguil leaves a force there, 38; Hasculf attacks it, but is defeated, 46; the Irish besiege it, 48; are defeated there, 52; given up with other ports to Henry II by Striguil, 56; O'Rourke assaults it, 58; chief men left there by Henry II, to keep Ireland, 70; men of Dublin slaughtered by Donald O'Brien, 82; Trinity Church (Cathedral?), 110.
- Dosnild** (Donnell), King of Ossory, joins Raymond Fitz-gerald against O'Brien, 104; his address to the troops, 104.
- Down** taken by De Courcy, 114; he is besieged there, 116; relics at, 150.
- Dundonald**, Raymond le Gros builds a fort there, 30.
- Eclipses**, three in three years, 124.
- England**, the Silver Isle; Ireland, the Golden, 152.
- English**, a phantom army scares them, 16; Fitz-stephen addresses them, 22; the Irish enslave English children, 38; the English in Dublin defeat the Irish, 50; Irish Services to be in the English fashion, 66; the English in Ireland demand to be set under Reimund Fitz-gerald, 78; they invade Offaly, 78; rout a Cork fleet, 80; besieged in Limerick by O'Brien, 104; permitted to take food from the churches, 120; advance to Tuam, 122; defeat King Roderick, 122.
- Felmeth**, 128/26.
- Ferand**, William, shows bravery at Waterford, 32.
- Ferns**, Macmorgh winters there, 8; holds a strong position near it, 18; his death and burial there, 44.
- Firlee** (a territory on the river Bann, co. Antrim), de Courci defeated there, 118.
- Fitz-Audeline**, William de, sent to Ireland by Henry II, 110; envies and hates the Geraldines, 110; is self-indulgent and a plunderer, 112; robs Maurice Fitz-gerald's sons, 112; is a bad character, 112-114; is recald to England, 122.
- Fitz-gerald, Alexander**, son of Maurice, his bravery, 50.
- Fitz-gerald, Davy**, nephew of Raymond, 94.
- Fitz-gerald, Gerald**, son of Raymond, his bravery, 50.
- Fitz-gerald, Maurice**, half-brother to Sir Robert Fitz-stephen, helps Macmorgh, 8; has land granted him by Macmorgh, 12; arrives with forces at Wexford, 24; at Dublin, 48; harangues his men, 50; left as a leader in Ireland by Henry II, 70; warns de Lacy of coming treachery, 74; description of him, 76; his courage, 100; his death, 112.
- Fitz-gerald, Nesta**, daughter of Maurice, marries Hervey of Montmaurice, 92.
- Fitz-gerald, Raymond (Le Gros)**, son of Maurice Fitzgerald, and nephew of Sir Robert Fitz-stephen, sent to Ireland by Henry II, 30; repels the men of Waterford, 32; joins Earl Striguil, 34; joins in taking Waterford and Dublin, 36; sent by Henry II into Gascony, 40; is in Dublin, 48; his bravery at Dublin, 50; left as Viceroy in Ireland with Striguil, and invades Offaly, in command of the English troops, 78; marches towards Waterford, 80; goes to Wales, 82; lands at Wexford, and saves Striguil, 84; marches against O'Connor, 84; restores peace, 86; marches towards Limerick, 94; crosses the Shannon and takes Limerick, 96; description of him, 98; victuals Limerick, 100; marches there against O'Brien, 104; captures it, 106; marches to Cork, and beats Cormack, 106; has a letter from his wife, 108; commits Limerick to O'Brien, 108; surrenders his government to Henry, 110; is childless, 120; sails to Cork, and helps to put down the rebellion, 126.

- Fitz-gerald, William**, father of Raymond, dies, 82.
- Fitz-gerald, William**, eldest son of Maurice, marries Helen Fitz-gilbert, 92.
- Fitz-henry, Meiler**, his bravery, 14, 100; leads the attack on Limerick, 106; gets Kildare, 128.
- Fitz-henry, Robert**, brother of Meiler, 100.
- Fitz-hugh, Raymond**, 100, slain, 148.
- Fitz-stephen, Sir Robert**, Constable of South Wales, is set free by Rys, the Prince, 8; collects troops to help Macmorgh, 8; lands at Banow, and marches to Wexford with him, 10; stands firm to Macmorgh, 18; urged to retire from Ferns, 20; harangues the English, 22; helps to defeat O'Conor, 26; advises Macmorgh to get more English help, 28; is besieged in Carrick Castle, 48; his defence, 52; deceived into a surrender, 52; described, 54; imprisoned by Henry II, but pardoned after, 60; left by Henry II as a leader in Ireland, 70; his courage, 100; (? same) goes into Ireland with Fitz-Audeline, 110; and is robbed of lands by him, 112; is childless, 120; attacked by the Irish, 126; his right to come to Ireland, 134.
- Fitz-stephen, Maurice**, 30.
- Fitz-stephen, Meredus**, son of Sir Robert, dies at Cork, 124.
- Fitz-stephen, Raymond**, loses some of his lands, 112.
- Fitz-stephen, Rolf**, son of Robert, 120.
- Forthred, Fothred, Fothurtu**, now Forth, in Carlow, 128/24.
- Frederick**, Emperor of Germany, 44.
- French warfare** contrasted with Irish and Welsh, 151.
- Fresel**, Keeper of Waterford, is slain by his guides, 84.
- Geoffrey**, Earl of Bretagne, son of Henry II, rebels, 76; is overcome, 86; dies, 132.
- Gerald de Barri** (Giraldus Cambrensis), 62, 78; comes to Ireland, 126; his advice on the conquest and government of Ireland, 150-2. His brothers: *see* Barry.
- Geraldines**, the, envied, 110; praised, 113.
- Germon, Gurguntius**, 136/10.
- Glanuyl, Ralph de**, defeats Henry II's sons, 86.
- Glyndelagh** (Glendalough) hills, 36.
- Golden Isle**, Ireland, 152.
- Goshawk**, story of Henry II's, 56.
- Gothred**, King of Man, has letters from Striguil, 48.
- Griffin, Robert**, nephew of Maurice Fitz-gerald, has a dream, 73; saves de Laci from Rory's treachery, 74; slays Rory, 76; gets a castle, 128/24.
- Gundeville, Hugh de**, left as a leader in Ireland by Henry II, 70.
- Gurguntius**, Belyn's son, 136/10.
- Gylmory, K.**, at Arthur's feast at Karlyon, 136/14.
- Hasculf**, chief man in Dublin, escapes from it, 36; goes with forty Norse ships to attack it, and is captured, 46; is beheaded, 48.
- Haverford**, 72.
- Helen**, sister of Earl Striguil, given to William, son of Maurice Fitz-gerald, 92.
- Henry II of England**, 2; Macmorgh seeks help from him, 4; appeals to his subjects to aid Macmorgh, 6; forbids trade with Ireland, 40; his Irish edict, 48; lands at Waterford, 58; imprisons Fitz-stephen, 60; the Kings of Cork and Limerick do him homage, 60; the Kings of Connaught and Meath also yield to him, 62; feast given by him, 62; assembles Clergy at Cashel, and has Constitutions made, 64; his Irish affairs, 68; leaves Ireland, 70; despises the speaking stone of Lechlavar, 72; goes to Haverford, and Normandy, and does penance for Becket's death at Coutances, 72; makes peace with the French king, 72; his sons rebel, 76; collects troops at Rouen, 78; leaves Ireland to viceroys, 78; overcomes his sons, 86; Merlin's prophecy about his sons, 88; description of him, 88; gets a grant of the Lordship of Ireland from the

- Pope, 90; recalls Raymond Fitz-gerald, 102; his Irish Commissioners return, 110.
- Henry, son of Henry II, rebels against his father, 68, 76; overcome, 86; dies, 132.
- Hervey of Mountmaurice has land granted him, 12; wishes prisoners to be butchered (they're drown'd), 34; at Waterford, 56; succeeds Raymond Fitz-gerald as Constable, 82; is jealous of him, 92; marries Nesta Fitz-gerald, 92; sends lies about Raymond Fitz-gerald to Henry II, 102; his description, 102; childless, 120; turns monk, 126.
- Irish Church, spoild by John, 146.
- Irish folk, 52, 78, 82, 90, 110; Northerners true, Southerners false, 126; are false, 136, 142; plunder, 144; conspire, 150; tribute to be taken from, 152.
- Jeroboam, 142/18.
- John of Salisbury purchases privileges in Ireland for Henry II from Pope Adrian, 92; goes to Ireland, 130.
- John the Herford, 128/26.
- John the Wood (mad) leads forty Norse ships against Dublin, and is slain, 46.
- John, Constable of Chester, goes to Ireland, 128.
- John, Prince, son of Henry II, sent to Ireland, A.D. 1185, 134; his failure there, and its causes, 136-149; bad state of Ireland under him, 144; new edition of the *Expugnacio* sent him, 152.
- Julius Caesar, §4/3.
- Kenalayne, men of, 150/2.
- Kildare, Bishop of, helps to deceive the English, 52.
- Kildare, given to Meyler, but changed for Leix, 128/27.
- Kyldalo (Killaloe), 106.
- Kylka, 128/25.
- Lateran Council (March 1179), 124.
- Lacy, Hugh de, goes with William son of Aldeline as messenger to the Kings of Connaught and Meath, 62; left in Ireland as a leader by Henry II, 70; meets O'Rourke, 72; treacherously attacked by him, 74; returns to Ireland as Seneschal, 122; fortifies Leinster and Meath, 128; is suspected of aiming at Kingdom, 128; goes to England and returns, 130; is recald from Ireland, 134; is slain A.D. 1186, 150.
- Llandaff, Ralph, Archdeacon of, attends Synod of Cashel, 64.
- Lechlavar, Stone of, speaks, 70.
- Leix, changed for Kildare, 128/29.
- Leycestre (Leicester), Earl of, captured by Henry II, 86.
- Leinster, governed by Macmorgh, 2; Rory and the King of Connaught invade it, 4; Macmorgh harangues the men of Leinster, 20; had few castles, 128/23; some built, 128.
- Limerick, O'Brien, King of, is warred on by the King of Connaught, 26; Limerick left in charge of Miles of St. David's, 100; burnt by O'Brien, 110; Sir Robert Fitz-stephen and others go there, but retreat, 122.
- Lismore, Henry II goes there, 60; Christian, Bishop of, and Papal Legate, presides at Synod of Cashel, 64; Lismore attacked by the English, 80; Miles de Cogan goes there, 124; a castle built there, 148/22 (ruins still in being.—D.).
- London, Richard of, Governor of Cork A.D. 1177, 122/28.
- Louis, King of France, 44.
- Maccarthy, *see* Dermot Maccarthy.
- Mac Donlevy, King of Ulster, flees from de Courcy, 114; besieges de Courcy in Down, 116; is defeated, 116.
- Macdonough, Prince of Ossory, is defeated by Macmorgh, and sues for peace, 14.
- Macmorgh, *see* Dermot Macmorgh.
- Macmorgh, Eve, daughter of Dermot, marries Earl Striguil, 36.
- Macsaghlin of Olan, is taken prisoner at Waterford, 37.

- Mac-Tire** slays Miles de Cogan, 124.
- Man, Isle of**, governed by King Gothred, 48.
- Marseilles**, 132/7.
- Masturel, William**, joins Henry II, 68.
- Meath**, Rory king there, 2; ravaged by Earl Striguil, 38, by O'Connor, 84; yielded to Henry II, 62; wolf-woman in, 130; is well castled, 128/23, 130/9.
- Merlin**, prophecies of, 10, 34, 44, 58, 62, 70, 88.
- Meyley**, son of Raymond Fitz-gerald's cousin is at Wexford, 84; swims the Shannon, 94; description of him, 98; castle built for, 130/7.
- Miles of St. David's**, cousin of Raymond Fitz-gerald, left in charge of Limerick, 100.
- Milford Haven, Wales**, 124/15.
- Moling, St.**, prophecies of, 34, 58, 62, 138.
- Mountmaurice**, *see* Hervey.
- Myles of Cogan** helps in taking Dublin, 36; goes to Lismore, and is slain there, 124. *See* Cogan.
- Myght (Meath)** destroyed by O'Connor, 84.
- Newenham (Newnham)**, in Clendchestre, 56.
- Newry, de Courci** conquers at Ivor's Bridge near, 118.
- Nicol**, a priest, attends Synod of Cashel, 64; ? Prior of Wallingford, conveys Alexander's Bull into Ireland, 90.
- Normans**, John's young, pull the beards of the Irish chiefs, 140; are John's worst advisers, 142, 146.
- Norsemen** attack Dublin, 46.
- Not, William**, his bravery, 52.
- Oboy**, castle built in, 130/8.
- O'Brien, Donald**, King of Limerick and Thomond is warred against by the King of Connaught, and defeats him, 26; does homage to Henry II, 60; slaughters the men of Dublin, 82; rebels against Henry, 92; besieges Limerick, 104; holds conference with Raymond Fitz-gerald, 106; burns Limerick, 110.
- O'Connor, Roderic**, King of Connaught and Ireland, tries to raise the country against Macmorgh and the English, 18; addresses his followers, 20; comes to terms, 24; makes war on the King of Limerick, and is defeated, 26; beheads Macmorgh's son, 38; ravages Meath, 84.
- Odrone (Odroon, a territory in co. Carlow**, 52). Striguil defeats a Leinster force in a pass near, 54.
- Ofolanes (Offaly, in north of the present co. Kildare)**, Leinster, is invaded by the English, 78.
- Okenseley, Macmurgh** there, 18; Macmurgh of Okensely joins Raymond Fitz-gerald, 104.
- Olethan**, 148/25.
- Omurthy**, 128/25.
- Onolan**, 128/24.
- O'Phelan (Olan)**, 30, 37.
- Ophelayn**, 112.
- O'Rourke**, *see* Rory.
- Osbern (Osborne) of Hereford**, sent into Ireland, 102.
- Ossory (Kilkenny, etc., in Leinster)** invaded by Macmorgh, 14, 62.
- Paris**, 133/8.
- Parliament (Conference) at Rorik's Hill**, 74.
- Patrick, St.**, prophecy of, 138; his body found, 150.
- Pec, Richard de**, 128/19.
- Pembroke, Henry II** sails thence, 56.
- Phantom army** terrifies the English, 16.
- Philip of Worcester**, 134.
- Poitou, Earl of, Richard**, son of Henry II, rebels with his brothers, 78.
- Pope**: his right to all islands, 136; grants Ireland to Henry II, 136.
- Rathwyldes Tower**, 36.
- Rauf**, son-in-law of Miles de Cogan, slain at Lismore, 124.
- Raymond Fitzhugh (hues-son)**, 100.
- Raymond le Gras**, *see* Fitz-gerald, Raymond.

- Redlesford, Walter de**, kills John the Wood, 46; castle built to him, 128/25.
- Rehoboam**: Prince John foolishly imitates him, 142.
- Richard, Earl of Poitou**, son of Henry II, rebels against his father, 78; is overcome, 86.
- Richard of London** is in charge of Cork, 122.
- Richard of the pek (Peak)** reaches Ireland, 128/19.
- Robert de Bygaz**, 130/8.
- Robert de Po(w)er**, Constable of Waterford, comes to Ireland, 122.
- Roger le Poer** slain, 150.
- Rolf**, son of Robert Fitz-stephen, 76.
- Rorik's Hill**, Conference held there with Rory, 74.
- Rory (O'Rourke)**, King of Meath, left by his wife, 2; marches into Leinster to avenge his shame, 4; assaults Dublin, 58; yields to Henry II, 62; has a conference with de Lacy, 72; treacherously attacks him, 74; is slain by Maurice Fitz-gerald, 76.
- Rys**, son of Griffin, Prince of Wales, sets Fitz-stephen free, 8.
- Salisbury, John of**, 92, 130.
- Scotland**, King of, taken by Henry II, 86; a Papal Legate goes to Scotland, 114.
- Shestre (Chester)**, Earl of, captured by Henry II, 86.
- Shynen (Shannon)**, borders Meath, 82; the river swum, 94; King of Connaught there, 106.
- St. James**, 72.
- Stevenson**, *see* Fitz-stephen.
- Striguil, Richard**, Fitz-gilbert, Earl of, agrees to aid Macmorgh, and has Leinster given him, 6; receives letters from him, 28; sends Raymond le Gras to Ireland, 30; lands at Waterford, and assaults the town, 34; captures it, and marries Macmorgh's daughter, 36; leaves a force in Dublin, 38; his description, 54; sails to England, and yields Dublin and other ports to Henry II, 56; waits at Pembroke for favourable wind, 56; left as Viceroy in Ireland with Raymond Fitz-gerald, 78; asks help of him, and promises him his sister Basile, 84; saved by him, 84; his death, 108; burial, 110; his right to come to Ireland, 134.
- Sur**, parts Leinster and Munster, 30; King of Limerick comes there, 60; Raymond there, 84.
- Tachmeho**, 130/7.
- Theodinus, Cardinal**, comes to Normandy, to Henry II, 68.
- Troy**, English sprung from, 22.
- Tuam**, in Galway, occupied by the English, 122.
- Tybraghnych, Tibraghny** in S.W. Kilkenny, 60.
- Tyllagh**, 128/26.
- Ulster** invaded by de Courci, 114.
- Velletri, Archbishop Comyn** consecrated at, A. D. 1182, 132.
- Vivian**, a Papal Legate, comes to Down, 114; holds a Synod at Dublin, 120.
- Vryel**, in Ulster (the present counties of Louth, Armagh, and Monahan), 114; de Courci defeated there, 118.
- Wales**, 6, 8.
- Wallingford, Nichol**, Prior of, conveys Papal Bull to Ireland, 90.
- Walter, Theobald**, 150/1.
- Waterford**, Raymond le Gras lands near it, 30; capture by him of seventy of its inhabitants, 32; and butchery of them, 34; Earl Striguil lands there, 34; assault of it by him, and capture of it, 34, 36; the Irish slay the English there, 84; Council of Irish clergy gathered there, 90; its walls, 116.
- Weysford (Wexford)** men threaten to kill Fitz-stephen, 54; Henry II sails thence to England, 70; Raymond lands there, 84.
- Weysford (Wexford)**, Bishop of, deceives the English, 52.
- Wicklów, Castle**, 112; Wykynlo, 92.
- Worcester, Philip of**, takes Hugh de Laci's post, and is curst by the Irish, 134.



24 JAN 4

VICTORIA UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

